



## **Volume 3**

# **What we have done: an activity report from the Truth Justice and Healing Council**

**2013-2018**

The Truth Justice and Healing Council  
is coordinating the response of the Catholic Church in Australia  
to the Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse

## Contents

Authorising Church Bodies .....	4
Introduction .....	6
Purpose of this report .....	7
Commitment from Church Authorities .....	8
Background to the establishment of the Council .....	9
Council members .....	10
The Supervisory Group .....	11
The Royal Commission .....	13
The work of the Council .....	14
Time line – the Catholic Church and the Royal Commission .....	16
Engagement with the Royal Commission .....	33
Engagement with survivors .....	35
Engagement with the community .....	36
Engagement with Church reform groups .....	37
History and development of Church responses to child sexual abuse .....	38
The Council: leading the Church's response during the Royal Commission process .....	39
Catholic Church Initiatives .....	41
Royal Commission June 2014 Interim Report .....	44
Council's 2014 Activity Report .....	45
Data on the extent of child sexual abuse within the Church .....	46
Royal Commission Public Hearings .....	50
Royal Commission public case study hearings involving the Catholic Church in Australia .....	51
Case Study No 6: The response of a primary school and the Toowoomba Catholic Education Office to the conduct of Gerard Byrnes .....	55
Case Study No 8: Mr John Ellis' experience of the Towards Healing process and civil litigation .....	57
Case Study No 9: The responses of the Archdiocese of Adelaide, and the South Australian Police, to allegations of child sexual abuse at St Ann's Special School .....	59
Case Study No 11: The Christian Brothers' in Western Australia response to child sexual abuse at Castledare Junior Orphanage, St Vincent's Orphanage Clontarf, St Mary's Agricultural School Tardun and Bindoon Farm School .....	62
Case Study No 13: The response of the Marist Brothers to allegations of child sexual abuse against Brothers Kostka Chute and Gregory Sutton .....	64
Case Study No 14: The response of the Diocese of Wollongong to allegations of child sexual abuse against John Gerard Nestor, a priest of the Diocese .....	66
Case Study No 16: The Melbourne Response .....	68

Case Study No 26: The responses of the Sisters of Mercy, the Archdiocese of Rockhampton and the Queensland Government to allegations of child sexual abuse at St Joseph's Orphanage, Neerkol .....	70
Case Study No 28: Catholic Church authorities in Ballarat.....	72
Case Study No 31: Retired Bishop Geoffrey Robinson .....	77
Case Study No 35: Archdiocese of Melbourne .....	78
Case Study No 41: Disability service providers including Mater Dei School, Camden .....	81
Case Study No 43: Catholic Church authorities in the Maitland-Newcastle.....	83
Case Study No. 44 John Joseph Farrell .....	84
Case Study No 45: Responses to children with problematic or harmful sexual behaviours in schools .....	86
Case Study No 50: Catholic Church Final Hearing .....	87
Royal Commission research .....	90
Council submissions to issues papers .....	91
Issues Paper No 1: Working With Children Check.....	91
Issues Paper No 2: Towards Healing.....	92
Issues Paper No 3: Child Safe Institutions.....	93
Issues Paper No 4: Preventing Sexual Abuse of Children in Out-of-Home Care .....	94
Issues Paper No 5: Civil Litigation .....	96
Issues Paper No 6: Redress Schemes .....	98
Issues Paper No 7: Statutory Victims of Crime Compensation Schemes.....	100
Issues Paper No 8: Experiences of police and prosecution responses .....	102
Issues Paper No 9: Addressing the risk of child sexual abuse in primary and secondary schools.....	104
Issues Paper No 10: Advocacy and Therapeutic Treatment Services.....	106
Issues Paper No 11: Catholic Church Final Hearing.....	108
Consultation Papers.....	111
Redress and civil litigation.....	111
Institutional responses to child sexual abuse in out-of-home care.....	112
Best practice principles in responding to complaints of institutional child sexual abuse.....	113
Records and recordkeeping practices.....	113
Criminal justice issues.....	114
Strengthening Information Sharing Arrangements.....	114
Roundtable Discussions.....	115
Preventing Child Sexual Abuse in Out-of-Home Care .....	115
Working with Children Checks .....	115
Redress and Civil Litigation (Private Roundtable).....	116
Access to Record Keeping (Private Roundtable).....	116
Making Institutions Child Safe (Private Roundtable).....	116

Criminal Justice Reporting Offences.....	116
Multi-disciplinary and specialist policing responses.....	117
Advocacy and Therapeutic Support Services .....	117
Canon Law (Private Roundtable) .....	117
Royal Commission research .....	118
Institutional Responses .....	120
Council legal engagement with the Royal Commission .....	122
Stakeholder engagement .....	126
Communications and media.....	127
Contacts .....	130
Appendix 1 - Truth Justice and Healing Council Terms of Reference.....	131
Appendix 2 - Council Meeting attendance record .....	133
Appendix 3 - Royal Commission Letters Patent.....	134
Appendix 4 - Council Community engagement meetings .....	142
Appendix 5 - History and development of Church responses to child sexual abuse.....	146
Appendix 6 - Catholic Professional Standards 'Green Paper' Consultation Process.....	150
Appendix 7 - Guidelines for Church authorities in responding to civil claims for child sexual abuse .....	153
Appendix 9 - Royal Commission private session information overview .....	157
Appendix 10 - Analysis of claims of child sexual abuse made with respect to Catholic Church .....	161
Appendix 11 - Case Study 50: sample requests showing the range of issues covered.....	164
Appendix 12 - Case Study 50: Church authorities and seminary rectors who provided statements in response to the Royal Commission's inquiries for final Catholic Church hearing .....	176
Appendix 13 - Case Study 50 Summaries of panel contributions .....	178
Appendix 14 - Council submissions to Royal Commission Issues papers.....	195
Appendix 15 - Council Consultation paper submissions .....	196
Appendix 16 - Council Media releases.....	197
Appendix 17 - Prepared speeches .....	204
Appendix 18 - Council Newsletters .....	205
Appendix 19 - Council Blogs .....	212
Appendix 20 - Council Case study 'Hearing room updates' .....	219



## Authorising Church Bodies

The following Catholic Church bodies authorised the Truth Justice and Healing Council to represent them during the Royal Commission process:

### Dioceses

Archdiocese of Adelaide	Diocese of Broome	Diocese of Sandhurst
Archdiocese of Brisbane	Diocese of Bunbury	Diocese of Toowoomba
Archdiocese of Canberra-Goulburn	Diocese of Cairns	Diocese of Townsville
Archdiocese of Hobart	Diocese of Darwin	Diocese of Wagga Wagga
Archdiocese of Melbourne	Diocese of Geraldton	Diocese of Wilcannia-Forbes
Archdiocese of Perth	Diocese of Lismore	Diocese of Wollongong
Archdiocese of Sydney	Diocese of Maitland-Newcastle	Eparchy of Ss Peter & Paul Melbourne
Diocese of Armidale	Diocese of Parramatta	Maronite Catholic Diocese of St Maroun
Diocese of Ballarat	Diocese of Port Pirie	Military Ordinariate of Australia
Diocese of Bathurst	Diocese of Rockhampton	Personal Ordinariate of Our Lady of the Southern Cross
Diocese of Broken Bay	Diocese of Sale	

### Religious Institutes

Adorers of the Blood of Christ	Loreto Sisters	Sisters of Mercy Brisbane
Augustinian Recollect Sisters	Marist Brothers	Sisters of Mercy North Sydney
Augustinian Sisters, Servants of Jesus & Mary	Marist Fathers Australian Province	Sisters of Mercy Parramatta
Australian Ursulines	Marist Sisters – Congregation of Mary	Sisters of Nazareth
Benedictine Community of New Norcia	Ministers of the Infirm (Camillians)	Sisters of Our Lady of Sion
Blessed Sacrament Fathers	Missionaries of God's Love	Sisters of St Joseph
Brigidine Sisters	Missionaries of the Sacred Heart	Sisters of St Joseph of the Apparition
Canons Regular of Premontre (Norbertines)	Missionary Franciscan Sisters of the Immaculate Conception	Sisters of St Joseph of the Sacred Heart
Canossian Daughters of Charity	Missionary Sisters of Mary Queen of the World	Sisters of St Joseph, Perthville
Capuchin Friars	Missionary Sisters of St Peter Claver	Sisters of St Paul de Chartres
Christian Brothers	Missionary Sisters of Service	Sisters of the Good Samaritan
Cistercian Monks	Missionary Sisters of the Sacred Heart	Sisters of the Good Shepherd
Columban Fathers	Missionary Sisters of the Society of Mary	Sisters of the Holy Family of Nazareth
Congregation of the Mission – Vincentians	Missionary Society of St Paul	Sisters of the Little Company of Mary
Congregation of the Most Holy Redeemer – Redemptorists	Oblates of Mary Immaculate	Sisters of the Resurrection
Congregation of the Passion – Passionists	Order of Brothers of the Most Blessed Virgin Mary of Mount Carmel (Carmelites)	Society of African Missions
Congregation of the Sisters of Our Lady Help of Christians	Order of Friars Minor Conventual	Society of the Catholic Apostolate (Pallottines)
Daughters of Charity	Order of Saint Augustine	Society of Jesus
Daughters of Mary Help of Christians	Order of the Friar Servants of Mary (Servite Friars)	Society of St Paul
Daughters of Our Lady of the Sacred Heart	Our Lady of the Missions	Society of the Divine Word Australian Province
Daughters of St Paul	Patrician Brothers	Society of the Sacred Heart
De La Salle Brothers	Pious Society of St Charles – Scalabrinians	Sylvestrine-Benedictine Monks
Discalced Carmelite Friars	Poor Clare Colettines	Ursuline Missionaries of the Sacred Heart
Dominican Friars	Presentation Sisters – Lismore	Verbum Dei Missionary Fraternity
Dominican Sisters of Eastern Australia & The Solomons	Presentation Sisters – Queensland	<b>Other Entities</b>
Dominican Sisters of North Adelaide	Presentation Sisters – Tasmania	Australian Catholic Bishops Conference
Dominican Sisters of Western Australia	Presentation Sisters – Victoria	Catholic Religious Australia
Faithful Companions of Jesus	Presentation Sisters – Wagga Wagga	Catholic Church Insurance Limited
Family Care Sisters	Presentation Sisters – Western Australia	National Committee for Professional Standards
Franciscan Friars	Religious of the Cenacle	Prelature of the Holy Cross and Opus Dei
Franciscan Missionaries of Mary	Salesians of Don Bosco	Professional Standards Office Tasmania
Franciscan Missionaries of the Divine Motherhood	Salvatorian Fathers – Society of the Divine Saviour	Professional Standards Office NSW/ACT
Franciscans of the Immaculate	Secular Institute of the Schoenstatt Sisters of Mary	Professional Standards Office NT
Holy Cross Congregation of Dominican Sisters	Servants of the Blessed Sacrament	Professional Standards Office Qld
Holy Spirit Missionary Sisters	Sisters of Charity of Australia	Edmund Rice Education Australia
Hospitaller Order of St John of God	Sisters of Jesus Good Shepherd "Pastorelle"	Good Samaritan Education
Institute of Sisters of Mercy Australia & PNG		Kildare Ministries
		Loreto Mandeville Hall Toorak
		Trustees of Mary Aikenhead Ministries

## Introduction

On 12 November 2012, Prime Minister Julia Gillard announced that a Royal Commission would be established to investigate the way in which public and private institutions around Australia had responded to both historic and recent incidents of child sexual abuse. The Church's history of child sexual abuse contributed significantly to this decision.

The Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse (**Royal Commission**) would be given the opportunity to look at all institutions which provided services to children including religious, educational, cultural and sporting organisations, not-for-profit bodies, government institutions including state care providers, and the police.

On 12 December 2012, the peak organisations representing the Catholic Church in Australia (**Church**) – the Australian Catholic Bishops Conference (**ACBC**) and Catholic Religious Australia (**CRA**) – announced the creation of the Truth Justice and Healing Council (**Council**) to coordinate the Church's response to the Royal Commission.

On 11 January 2013, Her Excellency Quentin Bryce, Governor General of the Commonwealth of Australia, appointed the six-member Royal Commission to be chaired by the Hon Peter McClellan.

Since its establishment by Church leaders, the Council has been dedicated to delivering on its key roles of:

- representing the Church before the Royal Commission;
- contributing significantly to a reform agenda for the Church to ensure, as far as possible, such abuse as happened in the past never happens again and that survivors of abuse within the Church are treated fairly and with compassion;
- being the public voice of the Church in the community discourse about child sexual abuse; and
- co-operating with the Royal Commission in its research and policy development.

## Purpose of this report

This report describes the activities of the Council since it was established in December 2012, to the completion of its work and wind up on 30 April 2018.

Over the past five years the Council has been the co-ordination point for the development of the Church's reform agenda and has led the Church in its response to the Royal Commission.

This report records the Council's engagement with the Royal Commission, our development of the Church's position in the public policy debate, our work with survivors and their representatives and our role as the public voice of the Church in relevant areas.

The report also records some of the key concerns and issues which the Council has become increasingly aware of as it has gone about the business of connecting with the thousands of people who have been involved with and affected by the child sexual abuse crisis within the Church.

The Royal Commission handed its final report to the Federal Government on 15 December 2017.

This is Volume Three of the Council's Final Report. As well as this activity report, the Council, at the conclusion of its work in April 2018, provided the Supervisory Group with three other reports:

- Volume One: *Where from and where to: The Truth Justice and Healing Council, the Royal Commission and the Catholic Church in Australia*, detailing the Council's views of the Royal Commission process, the Church's response and the way forward for the Church,
- Volume Two: *The Royal Commission's recommendations and responses from the Truth Justice and Healing Council*, a report on the relevant findings and recommendations contained within the Royal Commission's final report and setting out options for the Church as it seeks to:
  - respond to, and where possible implement, the recommendations of the Royal Commission; and
  - embark on a process of reform that will enable it to participate fully in contemporary society while remaining faithful to Gospel values and the laws of the Universal Church, and
- Volume Four: *Emerging Themes: A snapshot of approaches taken by Church Authorities in Australia to formation, governance, legal and policy issues (2016)*, a report on the activities and initiatives of Church authorities up to 2016 in areas of relevance to the Royal Commission process.

## Commitment from Church Authorities

In October 2012, Church Authorities through the Supervisory Group jointly endorsed a commitment statement published initially as part of the Council's submission to the Royal Commission's Issues Paper No 2: *Towards Healing*.

The release of the commitment statement was the first time, anywhere in the world, that Catholic leaders across a nation had admitted to the historical cover ups, crimes and the deliberate movement of perpetrators of child sexual abuse in the Church.

The statement reflects the acceptance of the Church leadership as a whole that they must take responsibility for the past sexual abuse of children and the failures in the Church's response.

The statement has appeared as the foreword in all the Council's submissions to the Royal Commission.

It has also been publicised widely and distributed to all parishes and religious congregations around Australia.

### The Commitment Statement from Church Authorities reads:

The leaders of the Catholic Church in Australia recognise and acknowledge the devastating harm caused to people by the crime of child sexual abuse. We take this opportunity to state:

1. Sexual abuse of a child by a priest or religious is a crime under Australian law and under canon law.
2. Sexual abuse of a child by any Church personnel, whenever it occurred, was then and is now indefensible.
3. That such abuse has occurred at all, and the extent to which it has occurred, are facts of which the whole Church in Australia is deeply ashamed.
4. The Church fully and unreservedly acknowledges the devastating, deep and ongoing impact of sexual abuse on the lives of the victims and their families.
5. The Church acknowledges that many victims were not believed when they should have been.
6. The Church is also ashamed to acknowledge that, in some cases, those in positions of authority concealed or covered up what they knew of the facts, moved perpetrators to another place, thereby enabling them to offend again, or failed to report matters to the police when they should have. That behaviour too is indefensible.
7. Too often in the past it is clear some Church leaders gave too high a priority to protecting the reputation of the Church, its priests, religious and other personnel, over the protection of children and their families, and over compassion and concern for those who suffered at the hands of Church personnel. That too was and is inexcusable.
8. In such ways, Church leaders betrayed the trust of their own people and the expectations of the wider community.
9. For all these things the Church is deeply sorry. It apologises to all those who have been harmed and betrayed. It humbly asks for forgiveness.

As the leaders of the Catholic Church in Australia we commit ourselves to endeavour to repair the wrongs of the past, to listen to and hear victims, to put their needs first, and to do everything we can to ensure a safer future for children.

---

## Background to the establishment of the Council

In February 2013 the ACBC and CRA jointly established the Council to lead and coordinate the Church's response to and appearances at hearings of the Royal Commission.

The Council is made up of 11 people with expertise across specialised fields of child sexual abuse, trauma, mental illness, suicide, psycho-sexual disorders, education, public administration, law and governance.

Throughout the life of the Council four of its members have been either survivors of clerical abuse within the Church or have immediate family members who have been abused.

The majority of Council members are lay people, two of its members are bishops, and one is a former international leader of a female religious congregation.

The Council provides independent advice to the ACBC and CRA, through a Supervisory Group, made up of the Permanent Committee of the ACBC and representatives of CRA.

The Supervisory Group has endorsed all submissions made by the Council to the Royal Commission.

Thirty-one dioceses and 97 religious institutes, commonly referred to as congregations and orders, agreed to have the Council represent and act for them during the Royal Commission process.

The ACBC appointed Francis Sullivan as the CEO of the Council. He has led the Church's response in the Royal Commission public hearings and other activities, and by meeting with and responding to survivors and survivor groups.

He has kept the Catholic community informed about the Royal Commission process and the Church's response through well over 120 meetings with religious orders and dioceses, Catholic welfare, health and education groups and parish visits around Australia.

He has also directed the Church public communications, responding to all media requests and providing regular information through the Council's communications channels.

The terms of reference for the Council are at [Appendix 1](#) - Truth Justice and Healing Council Terms of Reference.

## Council members

The Council is chaired by the Hon Neville Owen, former judge of the Supreme Court of Western Australia and former HIH Royal Commissioner. Justice Owen has a distinguished 40-year career as a judge, barrister, solicitor, educator, advocate and reformer. He has worked closely with many charities and educational bodies advising on governance and reform initiatives.

Justice Owen's appointment followed the death of the Council's inaugural chair, the Hon Barry O'Keefe AM, QC in April 2014.

### Members of the Council

- Hon Neville Owen, Chair, former judge of the Supreme Court of Western Australia and former HIH royal commissioner;
- Ms Elizabeth Proust AO, Vice Chair, former secretary to the Victorian Department of Premier and Cabinet, and currently Chairman of the Bank of Melbourne, Nestlé Australia and other boards;
- Archbishop Mark Coleridge, Archbishop of Brisbane;
- Hon Greg Crafter AO, former South Australian minister of education;
- Prof Greg Craven, Vice-Chancellor of the Australian Catholic University;
- Mr Stephen Elder OAM, former member of the Victorian Legislative Assembly and parliamentary secretary for education and currently Executive Director of Catholic Education for the Archdiocese of Melbourne;
- Prof Maria Harries AM, Adjunct Professor at Curtin University and Research Fellow in Social Work and Social Policy at the University of Western Australia;
- Sr Maree Marsh csb, former congregational leader of the Sisters of St Brigid and currently Co-Chair Kildare Ministries and Psychologist with Anti-Slavery Australia, University of Technology Sydney;
- Prof Rosemary Sheehan AM, Department of Social Work, Faculty of Medicine, Nursing and Health Sciences, Monash University;
- Dr Marian Sullivan, Child and Adolescent Psychiatrist; and
- Bishop Bill Wright, Bishop of Maitland-Newcastle.

### Former members

- The Hon Barry O'Keefe AM QC (deceased April 2014), inaugural chair of the Council, a highly respected barrister, arbitrator and judge. He played a pivotal role in the creation of the Council, the setting of its agenda and its approach to the Royal Commission.
- Dr Sue Gordon AM, former magistrate in the WA Children's Court, inaugural ATSIC commissioner and chair of the National Indigenous Council and the NT Emergency Response Taskforce.
- Mr Jack Heath, mental health advocate, former diplomat and senior government adviser, current CEO of SANE Australia.

A record of the attendance of Council members at meetings of the Council appears at [Appendix 2](#) - Council Meeting attendance record.

## The Supervisory Group

The Council provides independent advice to the ACBC and CRA, through a Supervisory Group, which is made up of the Permanent Committee of the ACBC and representatives of CRA.

The Supervisory Group provides final signoff to all Council submissions and other initiatives developed by the Council.

Over the five years of its operation the Supervisory Group has accepted all advice and endorsed all submissions from the Council.

## Members of the Supervisory Group

- Archbishop Denis Hart, Archbishop of Melbourne and President of the ACBC
- Archbishop Mark Coleridge, Archbishop of Brisbane
- Archbishop Timothy Costelloe SDB, Archbishop of Perth
- Sr Ruth Durick OSU, President CRA and Provincial Prioress Ursulines of the Roman Union
- Archbishop Anthony Fisher OP, Archbishop of Sydney
- Bishop Eugene Hurley, Bishop of Darwin
- Bishop Vincent Long OFM Conv, Bishop of Parramatta
- Fr Tom McDonough CP, Provincial Congregation of the Passion of Jesus Christ and Vice President CRA
- Archbishop Christopher Prowse, Archbishop of Canberra and Goulburn, and
- Archbishop Philip Wilson, Archbishop of Adelaide, who is on leave of absence from the Supervisory Group.

Since 2016 it has been customary for representatives of the Ministerial Public Juridic Persons (PJPs) – namely Emeritus Professor Gabrielle McMullen, Trustee Mary Aikenhead Ministries, and Br Paul Oakley CFC President, Edmund Rice Education Australia Council – to attend meetings of the Supervisory Group.

## Former members

- Very Rev Tony Banks OSA, Provincial of the Order of St Augustinian
- Sr Anne Derwin rsj, former Congregational Leader of the Sisters of St Joseph
- Cardinal George Pell, former Archbishop of Sydney
- Bishop Michael Putney (dec) former Bishop of Townsville
- Sr Berneice Loch rsm, former Institute Leader of the Institute of the Sisters of Mercy of Australia and Papua New Guinea and past president of CRA

- Bishop Greg O'Kelly SJ, Bishop of Port Pirie
- Bishop Peter Ingham, Bishop of Wollongong
- Sr Annette Cunliffe rsc, former Congregational Leader of the Sisters of Charity and past president of CRA, and
- Fr Paul Smith OFM, Provincial Minister of the Franciscans.



---

## The Royal Commission

On Friday 11 January 2013, Her Excellency Quentin Bryce, Governor General of the Commonwealth of Australia, appointed a six-member Royal Commission to investigate institutional responses to child sexual abuse.

The Royal Commission has inquired into how institutions with a responsibility for children have managed and responded to allegations and instances of child sexual abuse.

It focused on where systems had failed to protect children and made recommendations on how to improve laws, policies and practices to prevent and better respond to child sexual abuse in institutions.

The Commissioners looked at organisations that are, or were in the past, involved with children including government agencies, schools, sporting clubs, orphanages, foster care organisations and religious organisations.

The Hon Justice Peter McClellan AM was the Chair of the Royal Commission. He was supported by five other Commissioners, Justice Jennifer Coate, Mr Bob Atkinson AO APM, Mr Robert Fitzgerald AM, Prof Helen Milroy and Mr Andrew Murray.

The Royal Commission released an interim report on 30 June 2014. At the time, it asked the Federal Government for an extension of two years in which to complete its investigations. That extension was granted.

The Council publicly supported the Royal Commission's request for additional time to continue its investigations.

The Royal Commission provided its final report to the Federal Government on 15 December 2017 and it was released to the public that day.

See [Appendix 3](#) - Royal Commission Letters Patent

## The work of the Council

A significant part of the Council's work was to co-ordinate the legal representation for the Church during Royal Commission case studies, to provide guidance and advice to the Church leadership and Church institutions in responding to the Royal Commission and to articulate a pathway to truth, justice and healing for the survivors of child sexual abuse perpetrated within Church institutions.

The Council has provided oversight and advice on the coordination of the 'whole-of-Church' approach to engaging with the Royal Commission and the Catholic and broader community.

This leadership has been demonstrated through the Council appearing as a party in all the Royal Commission's public hearings involving Church institutions, its engagement with and advocacy for survivors, the commentary it provided in the media and through its attendance at hundreds of meetings with Catholic communities across Australia.

The Council has also provided leadership through its policy and communication activities. It developed a raft of public policy positions and an internal Church reform agenda that was endorsed by the Church leadership through the ratification of the Supervisory Group.

The Council had a significant influence over the way in which various Church authorities ensure the safety of children in their schools, parishes and other places as well as how they respond to child sexual abuse survivors as they come forward seeking justice and compassion.

It also made a significant contribution to the public debate through responding to the Royal Commission's issues papers and participating in its round table processes.

In the period to the end of April 2018, the Council has been engaged on behalf of the Church in discussions and negotiations with the Commonwealth, state and territory governments and representatives of survivor groups and other non-government institutions seeking the establishment of a national redress scheme.

In its communications and media activities the Council demonstrated the Church is willing to accept criticism, is not defensive about its past and will engage in the public discussion with honesty, humility and transparency.

### Council meetings

Between its establishment in December 2012 and its wind-up on 30 April 2018 the Council met in person 31 times, with other meetings held via teleconference as required.

At these meetings, the Council developed positions on all of the key issues which have been both the subject of Royal Commission investigations and the growing awareness within the Church itself that, along with broader regulatory and statutory reforms, internal Church practices also need to change.

### Key Royal Commission issues and activities considered by the Council

The Council provided advice and input on all the activities of the Church as it engaged with the Royal Commission including:

- development and overview of the Church's legal approach to the Royal Commission, including issues such as the cross examination of witnesses, privilege and the voiding of confidentiality agreements for survivors;

- all submissions and responses to draft findings to 15 of the case studies that directly focused on Church authorities, as well as assistance and representation in a further five case studies which indirectly involved Church authorities;
- framing of Council responses to the Royal Commission's 11 issues papers and six consultation papers;
- direct participation in, or sourcing of experts to participate in Royal Commission roundtable discussions, workshops and private consultations; and
- assisting in a national data collection exercise undertaken by the Royal Commission.

### Key internal Church issues considered by the Council

The key internal issues which the Council advised Church leaders on during the course of the Royal Commission and the Church's engagement with it include:

- providing advice, oversight and coordination of the Church's 'one voice' approach to engagement with the Royal Commission and the broader community;
- releasing survivors from any 'confidentiality clauses' struck as part of settlement agreements so these people could come before the Royal Commission both in public hearings and during private sessions to tell their stories;
- developing the Church's legal position during case studies relating to privileged documents, cross examination of survivor witnesses, submissions in reply to those of the Royal Commission and other legal issues;
- developing guidelines for dioceses and religious congregations on how to approach civil claims for child sexual abuse, including the requirements to assist plaintiffs to identify a proper defendant;
- developing guidelines for Church authorities on how to approach re-considering past settlement claims with child sexual abuse survivors;
- developing the Church's position and support for a national redress scheme for institutional child sexual abuse survivors;
- providing advice on responses to local media for Church authorities;
- recommendations on the establishment of Catholic Professional Standards Limited, the body now charged with the development and monitoring of compliance with professional standards within the Church;
- acting as a 'clearing house' for local parishes seeking resources for local liturgies, apologies and other markers; and
- providing a reference point for updates on where the 'thinking' was moving within governments on addressing child safety and prevention and litigation reform generally.

## Time line – the Catholic Church and the Royal Commission

Over the life of the Royal Commission there have been many significant events and occasions that will shape the way in which the Church responds to child sexual abuse survivors in the future and which have revealed how the Church has dealt with them in the past.

### 2012

- 12 November Prime Minister Julia Gillard announces a Royal Commission will be established to inquire into institutional responses to child sexual abuse.
- 12 December The ACBC and CRA announce the establishment of the Council, its inaugural Chair, the Hon Barry O'Keefe and CEO, Francis Sullivan.

### 2013

- 11 January Her Excellency Quentin Bryce, Governor General of the Commonwealth of Australia, appoints a six-member Royal Commission, chaired by the Hon Peter McClellan, to investigate institutional responses to child sexual abuse.
- 17 January Council CEO announces the Church will waive confidentiality agreements signed with child sexual abuse victims and release any documents requested by the Royal Commission.
- 13 March Jorge Mario Bergoglio elected Pope on second day of the 2013 Papal Conclave, taking the papal name Francis.
- 3 April Full membership of the Council announced.
- 3 April Royal Commission has its first sitting in Melbourne at the County Court of Victoria.
- 15 April Council holds first meeting.
- 1 May [Parish Visit: TJHC CEO meets Townsville Bishop and other locals.](#)
- 3 May Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face).
- 8 May [Address: NSW and ACT Catechist Directors.](#)
- 3 June Council members meet.
- 12 June Council encourages victims of sexual abuse to contact the Royal Commission.
- 17 June Royal Commission invites submissions to [Issues Paper 1: Working with Children Checks.](#)
- 17 June [Address: Bishop of Bunbury and local priests in WA.](#)
- 20 June [Address: Church leaders in north-west Sydney.](#)
- 22 June [Address: St Thomas More Forum Canberra, Canberra.](#)

25 June	<a href="#">Address: Catholic Religious Australia's national assemble, Sydney</a>
3 July	<a href="#">Address: Clergy Life and Ministry on Royal Commission.</a>
9 July	<a href="#">Address: Council briefs leaders in Wagga Wagga.</a>
9 July	Royal Commission invites submissions to <a href="#">Issues Paper 2: Towards Healing</a> .
5 August	<a href="#">Address: Brisbane Catholic Education leadership day.</a>
8 August	<a href="#">Address: Perth clergy.</a>
8 August	Royal Commission invites submissions to <a href="#">Issues Paper 3: Child Safe Institutions</a> .
12 August	Council members meet.
12 August	<a href="#">Council submission in response to Issues Paper No 1: Working with Children Check</a> calls for national approach for Working with Children Checks.
27 August	Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face).
2 September	<a href="#">Address: St Kevin's College, Melbourne.</a>
9 September	Council members meet.
11 September	Royal Commission invites submissions to <a href="#">Issues Paper 4: Preventing Sexual Abuse of Children in Out-of-Home Care</a> .
15 September	Royal Commission commences its first public hearing, <a href="#">Case Study 1</a> , in which it examines the response of institutions including Scouts Australia, Hunter Aboriginal Services and the then Department of Community Services, to information and allegations concerning Steven Larkins, the former CEO of Hunter Aboriginal Children's Services.
	The Royal Commission will go on to hold a total of 57 case studies, including 37 that did not involve Catholic Church authorities.
25 September	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
30 September	<a href="#">Council submission in response to Issues Paper 2: Towards Healing</a> .
3 October	Council releases a statement outlining a range of reform proposals within the Church including the development of an independent agency to set, monitor and audit standards to ensure the safety of children and an independent agency to determine redress payments for child sexual abuse survivors.
11 October	<a href="#">Council submission in response to Issues Paper 3: Child Safe Institutions</a> calls for a national mandatory accreditation and data collection system for all institutions working with children.
14 October	Council members meet.
29 October	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
11 November	Council members meet.

- 12 November [Council releases the 'Commitment Statement from leaders of the Catholic Church in Australia'](#) in which all Australian bishops and congregational leaders apologised and asked forgiveness for the Church's response to child sexual abuse.
- For the first time anywhere in the world, the leaders of the Catholic Church in Australia jointly admitted crimes and cover-ups occurred, that the Church's reputation was put ahead of the protection of children, survivors were not believed, perpetrators were moved and abuse was not reported to police. This statement became the preface to all submissions and other documents prepared for the Royal Commission on behalf of the Church and was distributed widely throughout the Church and broader community.
- 14 November [Council writes to all state and territory attorneys-general](#) calling for an independent, national sexual child abuse compensation scheme, a national approach to police reporting and a national statutory complaint handling process.
- 15 November [Council submission in response to Issues Paper 4: Preventing Sexual Abuse of Children in Out-of-Home Care.](#)
- 20 November [Key note Address: 'Taking Responsibility' to Ballarat child sex abuse survivors and community in Ballarat.](#)
- 26 November Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face).
- 6 December Royal Commission invites submissions to [Issues Paper 5: Civil Litigation.](#)
- 6 December Vatican announces Pope Francis will establish a Pontifical Commission for the Protection of Minors.
- 9 December Royal Commission commences public hearings in Sydney into the Church as part of [Case Study 4](#), which examines the experiences of four survivors with the Church's *Towards Healing* process. This is the first of 15 case studies over the next four years which will focus specifically on Church institutions.

## 2014

- 10 February Beginning of the Green Paper process leading to the establishment of Catholic Professional Standards Ltd. Draft position paper: *Reform Proposals for Addressing Child Sexual Abuse* prepared for Council consideration.
- 10 February Council members meet.
- 17 February Royal Commission commences public hearings in Brisbane as part of [Case Study 6](#), which examines the response of the Catholic Education Office in the Diocese of Toowoomba, to allegations of child sexual abuse at a school in the Diocese.
- 26 February Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face).
- 10 March Royal Commission commences public hearings in Sydney as part of [Case Study 8](#), which examines the response of the Archdiocese of Sydney to the complaint made by John Ellis under *Towards Healing* and the subsequent management of legal proceedings brought by Mr Ellis.

14 March	Green Paper consultation with the National Committee for Professional Standards (NCPS): <i>Green Paper: Ensuring a Safe Church for All</i> .
17 March	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Adelaide as part of <a href="#">Case Study 9</a> , which examines the responses of the Archdiocese of Adelaide, and the South Australian Police, to allegations of child sexual abuse at St Ann's Special School.
19 March	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
1 April	Green Paper provided by TJHC to Supervisory Group: <i>Green Paper: Ensuring a Safe Church for Children: 10 April 2014</i> .
2 April	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
14 April	Council members meet.
15 April	<a href="#">Council submission in response to Issues Paper 5: Civil Litigation</a> calls for civil litigation reforms including an extension to current limitations period ensuring that plaintiffs have available to them an entity that can be sued.
23 April	Royal Commission invites submissions to <a href="#">Issues Paper 6</a> : Redress Schemes.
28 April	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Perth as part of <a href="#">Case Study 11</a> , which examines the response of the Christian Brothers in Western Australia to child sexual abuse at Castledare Junior Orphanage, St Vincent's Orphanage Clontarf, St Mary's Agricultural School Tardun and Bindoon Farm School.
April	National public awareness campaign launched calling for survivors of child sexual abuse to come forward to the Royal Commission to share their story.
6 May	Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face).
8 May	Draft Green Paper considered by ACBC and CRA. Decision to appoint external consultant, reference group established, Council with assistance of reference group to oversee the work of the consultant.
19 May	<a href="#">Address: Queensland Catholic Education Commission Child Protection In-service Day</a> .
26 May	<a href="#">Address: Shepparton principals and priests</a> .
29 May	Royal Commission invites submissions to <a href="#">Issues Paper 7</a> : Statutory Victims of Crime Compensation Schemes.
May	As part of a Vatican initiative, the ACBC, through a group of senior seminary directors and other professionals, commences looking at current practices regarding child protection training in Australian seminaries and theological colleges.
5 June	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
10 June	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Canberra as part of <a href="#">Case Study 13</a> , which examines the response of the Marist Brothers to allegations of child sexual abuse in schools in the ACT, NSW and Queensland.

31 June	Royal Commission releases interim report, <a href="#">Volume 1</a> and <a href="#">Volume 2</a> , in which it commits to making recommendations to government regarding the establishment of a national redress scheme for survivors of institutional child sexual abuse and for reforms to civil litigation.  Royal Commission also requests a two-year extension, to the end of 2017, taking the life of Royal Commission from three years to five. <a href="#">Council supports extension request.</a>
24 June	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Sydney as part of <a href="#">Case Study 14</a> , which examines the response of the Diocese of Wollongong to allegations of child sexual abuse against former priest, John Gerard Nestor.
25 June	<a href="#">Address: CRA National Assembly.</a>
3 July	<a href="#">Address: Clergy Life and Ministry.</a>
4 July	Meeting of the Supervisory Group
14 July	Council members meet.
17 July	<a href="#">Address: Catholic Social Services Victoria.</a>
25 July	<a href="#">Parish Visit: St Charles Borromeo parishioners in Sydney.</a>
31 July	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
11 August	Council members meet.
11 August	<a href="#">Council submission in response to Issues Paper 6: Redress Schemes</a> calls for the establishment of a mandatory national redress scheme for survivors of institutional child sexual abuse, to be operated by Government but funded by the institutions responsible for the abuse.
18 August	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Melbourne as part of <a href="#">Case Study 16</a> , which examines the principles, practices and procedures of <i>The Melbourne Response</i> .
27 August	Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face).
September	Federal Government announces it will provide additional funding and extend the reporting time for the Royal Commission by two years, to December 2017.
8 September	Council members meet.
14 September	<a href="#">Address: Rockhampton Diocesan Catholic Education Office.</a>
15 September	<a href="#">Special service for child abuse survivors in Ballarat.</a>
1 October	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
2 October	<a href="#">Council submission in response to Issues Paper 7: Statutory Victims of Crime Compensation Schemes.</a>
13 October	Council members meet.



- 21 October Address: Catholic Social Services Australia Leadership Forum.
- 26 October [Address: Tasmanian Catholic Schools Parents Council AGM.](#)
- 27 October Blue Knot Day 2014 – Adults Survivors of Child Abuse.
- 28 October [Parish Visit: Corpus Christi Parish Canberra.](#)
- 31 October [Address: Senior Catholic educators, Archdiocese of Canberra-Goulburn.](#)
- 3 November [Parish visit: Our Lady of the Rosary Parish Brisbane.](#)
- 7 November Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
- 7 November [Address: Bathurst diocesan leaders.](#)
- 8 November Meeting with the National Catholic Education Commission.
- 10 November Council members meet.
- 13 November [Address: National Catholic Education Commission, Sydney.](#)
- 17 November Parish visit: Our Lady of the Way Parish, North Sydney.
- 18 November Parish visit: St Patrick's Sutherland Deanery, Sydney.
- 25 November Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face)
- 26 November Meeting of Bishops and CRA Leaders.
- 26 November Meeting of the Supervisory Group (Plenary).
- 27 November [Council releases Guidelines for responding to requests from survivors of child sexual abuse whose claims have been subject to settlements.](#)
- December [Council releases interim Activity Report](#) detailing its activities since its establishment.
- 8 December Draft Green Paper distributed to bishops and religious leaders for consideration.
- 9 December [Parish visit: Griffith, NSW.](#)
- 15 December [Parish visit: Wollongong diocesan leaders and parishioners.](#)
- 18 December [Pope Francis appoints a leading Wollongong child welfare worker](#), Kath McCormack, to the newly established Vatican Commission for the Protection of Minors.
- 19 December [Report of Case Study 11](#) tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.
- 19 December [Report of Case Study 14](#) tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.

## 2015

- 4 January Gabrielle Trainor AO appointed Green Paper consultant.

28 January	Background Paper (to the Green Paper) dated 27 January 2015 distributed to bishops and religious leaders.
4 February	<a href="#">Address: Discalced Carmelite Friars, Sydney.</a>
6 February	<a href="#">Pope Francis writes to Church leaders internationally</a> calling for full cooperation with the Vatican's newly established Commission for the Protection of Minors.
9 February	Council members meet.
11 February	Revised Green Paper sent to all bishops and religious leaders.
11 February	<a href="#">Report of Case Study 4</a> tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.
11 February	<a href="#">Report of Case Study 8</a> tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.
12 February	<a href="#">Report of Case Study 6</a> tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.
18 February	Revised Green Paper Background Paper distributed to ACBC agencies.
24 February	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
March	Council commences national consultation on the establishment of Catholic Professional Standards (CPS), an independent standards' monitoring body for the Church in Australia.
2 March	Green Paper Consultation meeting Canberra.
4 March	Green Paper Consultation meeting Adelaide.
6 March	Green Paper Consultation meeting Perth.
10 March	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Sydney as part of <a href="#">Case Study 24</a> , which examines prevention of child sexual abuse in out-of-home care and responding to allegations of child sexual abuse occurring in out-of-home care. Several Catholic providers of out-of-home care are invited to participate in the hearing.
13 March	Green Paper Consultation meeting Hobart.
16 March	Council members meet.
16 March	<a href="#">Council submission to Redress and Civil Litigation Consultation Paper.</a>
18 March	Green Paper Consultation meetings Sydney.
23 March	Green Paper Consultation meeting Brisbane.
24 March	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
24 March	Green Paper Consultation meeting Melbourne.
25 March	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Sydney as part of <a href="#">Case Study 25</a> examining redress and civil litigation for child sexual abuse survivors.
April	Parish visit: St Mark's Parish Hall, Drummoyne, Sydney.

1 April	<a href="#">Address: Priests, educators and other senior Church people, Ararat, Vic.</a>
7 April	Draft Green Paper Consultation Report received from consultant.
13 April	Council members meet.
14 April	Address: Scalabrinian Missionaries Provincial Assembly, Sydney.
14 April	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Rockhampton as part of <a href="#">Case Study 26</a> , examining the experiences of a number of men and women who were resident at St Joseph's Orphanage Neerkol, operated by the Sisters of Mercy between 1940 and 1975.
21 April	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
29 April	Green Paper Consultation Report: <i>Restoring Trust Together</i> received from consultant.
1 May	Royal Commission invites submissions to <a href="#">Issues Paper 8</a> : Experiences of Police and Prosecution Responses.
1 May	Address: Principals' Association of Victorian Catholic Secondary Schools, Essendon, Vic.
May	Church leaders including Archbishops of Sydney, Melbourne and Brisbane and leaders of Christian, Marist and De La Salle Brothers commit to identifying an entity backed by assets or insurance to respond in civil claims of child sex abuse.
8 May	Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face).
11 May	Council members meet.
May	<i>Restoring Trust Together</i> sent to Supervisory Group, ACBC and CRA.
19 May	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Ballarat as part one of <a href="#">Case Study 28</a> , which examines the response of the Diocese of Ballarat and other Church Authorities in Ballarat and the Victoria Police to allegations of child sexual abuse against clergy or religious.
4 June	<a href="#">Report of Case Study 9</a> tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.
10 June	<a href="#">Parish visit: Stella Maris Parish, Sunshine Coast.</a>
11 June	Parish visit: St Mary's Cathedral Parish Centre, Hobart.
23 June	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
29 June	Royal Commission continues public hearings in Sydney as part of <a href="#">Case Study 24</a> , examining prevention of child sexual abuse in out-of-home care and responding to allegations of child sexual abuse occurring in out-of-home care.
13 July	Council members meet.
14 July	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
28 July	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.

31 July	Royal Commission invites submissions to <a href="#">Issues paper 9</a> : Risk of Child Sexual Abuse in Schools.
13 August	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
27 August	<a href="#">Council submission in response to Issues Paper 8: Police and Prosecution Responses.</a>
24 August	Royal Commission holds <a href="#">Case Study 31</a> in Sydney to hear the evidence of retired Bishop Geoffrey Robinson regarding the history and development of the Church's response to child sexual abuse and the development of <i>Towards Healing</i> .
September	Council calls for a new, consistent, nation-wide criminal law requiring the reporting of suspected child sexual abuse to the police.
14 September	<a href="#">Royal Commission releases a report relating to redress and civil litigation</a> for survivors of child sexual abuse, making recommendations which are <a href="#">welcomed by the Council</a> .
14 September	<a href="#">Report of Case Study 16</a> tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.
15 September	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
18 September	<a href="#">Council submission in response to Issues Paper 9: Addressing the Risk of Child Sexual Abuse in Primary and Secondary Schools</a> calls for nationally consistent child safety laws and protocols for reporting to police.
1 October	Royal Commission invites submissions to <a href="#">Issues Paper 10</a> : Advocacy and Support and Therapeutic Treatment Services.
13 October	<a href="#">Address: Sacred Heart College, Melbourne.</a>
20 October	<a href="#">Address: Catholic Social Services Australia National Conference, Canberra.</a>
20 October	<a href="#">Keynote Address: Blackfriars Lecture Series - Australian Catholic University, Canberra.</a>
November	ACBC and CRA sign off on Catholic Professional Standards Ltd.
3 November	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
11 November	Council members meet.
15 November	<a href="#">Council releases Guidelines for Church Authorities in Responding to Civil Claims for Child Sexual Abuse</a> commencing 1 January 2016.
20 November	<a href="#">Address: Chancellors, vicars general and child protection professionals from NSW dioceses.</a>
24 November	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Melbourne as part of <a href="#">Case Study 35</a> , which examines the response of the Archdiocese of Melbourne to allegations of child sexual abuse by several priests of the Archdiocese.
24 November	Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face).
26 November	Meeting of the Supervisory Group (Plenary).

7 December Royal Commission commences public hearings in Melbourne as part two of [Case Study 28](#), which examines the response of the Diocese of Ballarat to allegations of child sexual abuse in the Diocese.

11 December [Report of Case Study 13](#) tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.

## 2016

2 February Meeting of the Supervisory Group.

8 February Council members meet.

16 February [Address: Victorian Catholic school principals.](#)

22 February Royal Commission commences further public hearings in Ballarat as part three of [Case Study 28](#) into child sexual abuse in the Diocese of Ballarat. Part three of the case study examines the response of the Christian Brothers to allegations of child sexual abuse by members of the Order in Ballarat.

1 March Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face).

10 March [Parish Visit: Melbourne parishes gather to discuss Royal Commission and child sexual abuse.](#)

15 March Royal Commission commences public hearings in Sydney as part of [Case Study 38](#), which examines the experiences of survivors of child sexual abuse in the criminal justice system. It focuses on the experiences of survivors, particularly young children and people with disability, in reporting to police and in relation to oral evidence and cross examination.

5 April Meeting of the Supervisory Group.

5 April Draft Constitution for Catholic Professional Standards Ltd approved by Supervisory Group.

12 April [Meeting with Baroness Sheila Hollins, Member of the Pontifical Council for the Protection of Minors.](#)

21 April [Report of Case Study 26](#) tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.

21 April [Address: Newman College Council dinner, Melbourne.](#)

April The Royal Commission holds [public round tables to discuss criminal justice issues](#) in Sydney, attended by the Council.

5 May Royal Commission invites submissions to [Issues Paper 11](#): Catholic Church Final Hearing.

6 May Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face).

9 May Meeting of the Supervisory Group (Plenary).

9 May	Draft Catholic Professional Standards Ltd constitution considered at joint meeting of ACBC and CRA with PJP Trustees.
16 May	Council members meet.
26 May	<a href="#"><u>Council submission in response to Issues Paper 10: Advocacy and Therapeutic Treatment Services.</u></a>
2 June	<a href="#"><u>Ecumenical Redress Conversation attended by representatives of Anglican, Catholic, Salvation Army and Uniting Churches, Australia.</u></a>
2 June	<a href="#"><u>Parish visit: Sunbury community, Melbourne.</u></a>
7 June	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
14 June	Parish visit: Cairns Community meeting.
16 June	<a href="#"><u>School visit: St Andrew's College Cairns, meeting with students and staff.</u></a>
22 June	Address: CRA National Conference, Leura NSW.
27 June	Parish visit: Bendigo Spirituality in the Pub.
28 June	Address: CatholicCare Melbourne Staff Leadership Day.
29 June	Parish visit: Mount Gambia Parish.
1 July	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
5 July	<a href="#"><u>Address: Capuchin Friars on issues emerging from Royal Commission.</u></a>
11 July	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Sydney as part of <a href="#"><u>Case Study 41</u></a> , which enquires into responses of disability service providers, including the Mater Dei School and the Sisters of the Good Samaritan to allegations of child sexual abuse.
19 July	<a href="#"><u>Address: Joint formation session for Calvary Ministries &amp; Little Company of Mary Health Care.</u></a>
23 July	<a href="#"><u>Address: St Vincent de Paul National Council Meeting, Darwin.</u></a>
26 July	<a href="#"><u>TJHC in conversation with delegates from Rome.</u></a>
2 August	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
2 August	Inaugural directors of Catholic Professional Standards Ltd appointed: John Watkins, Patricia Faulkner and Geoffrey Giudice.
11 August	Address: Archdiocese of Perth General Assembly, Perth.
11 August	<a href="#"><u>Address: TJHC Chair addresses leaders of Catholic Church agencies in Perth.</u></a>
15 August	Council members meet.
18 August	Parish visit: Holy Name of Mary Parish, Hunters Hill, Sydney.

25 August	Address: Catholic Theological College, Melbourne, Royal Commission seminar.
28 August	<a href="#"><u>Council submission in response to Consultation Paper: Best Practice Principles in Responding to Complaints of Child Sexual Abuse in Institutions.</u></a>
31 August	<a href="#"><u>Council submission in response to Consultation Paper: Institutional Responses to Child Sex Abuse in Out-of-Home Care.</u></a>
31 August	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Newcastle as part of <a href="#"><u>Case Study 43</u></a> , which enquires into the response of Church Authorities in the Maitland-Newcastle region including the Diocese of Maitland-Newcastle and the Marist Brothers to allegations of child sexual abuse by clergy and religious.
6 September	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
12 September	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Sydney as part of <a href="#"><u>Case Study 44</u></a> , which examines the responses of Catholic Church Authorities to allegations of child sexual abuse made against John Joseph Farrell.
18 September	Address: Year of Mercy Panel Rosary Cultural Centre, Tamworth.
19 September	Council members meet.
20 September	Address: St Aloysius College staff development day.
27 September	Address: Dominican Friars Pre-Chapter Assembly, Templestowe.
28 September	Address: St Vincent de Paul social justice meeting.
29 September	<a href="#"><u>Address: Victorian Chapter of the St Vincent de Paul Society, Melbourne.</u></a>
October	The Australian Catholic Ministry Register (ACMR) of priests and male religious announces it has 500 members registered.
5 October	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
20 October	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Sydney as part of <a href="#"><u>Case Study 45</u></a> , which examines the response by public primary and independent secondary private schools including St Ignatius College, Riverview, to allegations of problematic or harmful sexual behaviours by students at those schools.
24 October	Council members meet.
25 October	Address: Catholic Social Services Australia Leaders' Summit, CLC Melbourne.
25 October	<a href="#"><u>Parish visit: St Roch's Parish Pastoral Council, Glen Iris, Melbourne.</u></a>
27 October	<a href="#"><u>Address: Catholic Theological College SRC, Melbourne.</u></a>
2 November	<a href="#"><u>Monthly Meeting, "Lookout" Survivors Group, Healesville.</u></a>
3 November	Address: The Quality of Mercy presentation, Melbourne.
8 November	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.

- 8 November [Parish visit: Notting Hill Spirituality in the Pub.](#)
- November Royal Commission holds a public hearing in Sydney into issues raised in its consultation paper on criminal justice.
- 14 November [Council submission in response to Consultation Paper: Criminal Justice](#) calls for a new, nationally consistent criminal law, relating to the reporting of child sexual abuse.
- 18 November Archdiocese of Melbourne announces doubling of compensation limit for claims made under *The Melbourne Response* following recommendations of a review of the scheme.
- 21 November Council members meet.
- 21 November [Council submission in response to Consultation Paper: Records and Recordkeeping.](#)
- 22 November Joint Meeting of the Council and Supervisory Group (face-to-face).
- 22 November CPS Limited launched. Mr John Watkins AM, Ms Patricia Faulkner AO, the Hon Geoffrey Giudice AO appointed to the Board.
- 23 November Meeting of the Supervisory Group (Plenary).
- 22 November ACBC and CRA announce the establishment of a new independent company limited by guarantee, Catholic Professional Standards Limited, established to set, monitor and report on the performance of Church Authorities against child and vulnerable adult protection standards.
- 9 December Royal Commission continues public hearings as part of [Case Study 43](#), examining the response of in the Diocese of Maitland-Newcastle and the Marist Brothers to allegations of child sexual abuse by clergy and religious in the region.
- 16 December Francis Sullivan, Council CEO, announced as member of Commonwealth Government's Independent Child Sexual Abuse Redress Advisory Council.
- 22 December [Council submission in response to Issues Paper 11: Then and Now – Catholic Church Authorities](#) is provided to the Royal Commission in preparation for the final Catholic hearing, Case Study 50.

## 2017

- 30 January Council members meet.
- 2 February Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
- 3 February Federal Government's Independent Advisory Council on Redress meets.
- 6 February Royal Commission commences public hearings in Sydney as part of [Case Study 50](#), the final Catholic hearing, which enquires into the current policies and procedures of Church authorities in Australia in relation to child-protection and child-safety standards, including responding to allegations of child sexual abuse. This was the final case study to focus on the Catholic Church.



6 February	As part of Case Study 50, Royal Commission releases comprehensive data report on the extent of child sexual abuse within the Church.
3 March	Federal Government's Independent Advisory Council on Redress meets.
7 March	Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
10 March	<a href="#">Keynote Address: Where to from here? Catalyst for Renewal, Hunters Hill Sydney.</a>
27 March	Royal Commission commences public hearings in Sydney in <a href="#">Case Study 57</a> , its final case study, which enquires into the nature, cause and impact of child sexual abuse in institutional contexts in Australia.
April	Address: Catholic Social Services Australia Leadership Forum.
5 April	Address: Archdiocese of Brisbane, Clergy Convocation, Brisbane.
19 April	<a href="#">Council submission to Royal Commission discussion paper: Strengthening Information Sharing Arrangements</a> calls for nationally consistent arrangements for information sharing concerned with the safety and wellbeing of children within and across sectors and jurisdictions.
3 May	Council members meet.
5 May	Federal Government's Independent Advisory Council on Redress meets.
5 May	Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face).
6 May	Meeting of the Supervisory Group (Plenary).
9 May	Federal Government's Independent Advisory Council on Redress meets.
15 May	Address: YPO WA chapter in Perth.
17 May	Address: Catholic Mission: One Heart Many Voices Conference, Sydney.
18 May	Address: Canberra-Goulburn Archdiocese Clergy Assembly, Canberra.
19 May	Federal Government's Independent Advisory Council on Redress meets.
31 May	Address: Marist Brothers Project Roundtable, Sydney.
1 June	Royal Commission releases <a href="#">updated Analysis of claims of child sexual abuse made with respect to Catholic Church Institutions in Australia</a> and accompanying <a href="#">explanatory document for weighted average methodology</a> .
3 June	Address: Keynote address to Wollongong Diocesan Assembly, Wollongong.
7 June	Federal Government's Independent Advisory Council on Redress meets.
14 June	<a href="#">Report of Case Study 41</a> tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.
21 June	Address: CRA National Assembly Dinner, Melbourne.
22 June	<a href="#">Address: CRA National Assembly.</a>

23 June	Federal Government's Independent Advisory Council on Redress meets.
27 June	Address: Jeff Whalan Executive Learning Group, Canberra.
28 June	<a href="#">Parish meeting: Sandringham Spirituality in the Pub, Melbourne.</a>
4 July	Address: Clergy Life and Ministry National Directors Annual Conference, North Sydney.
14 July	Federal Government's Independent Advisory Council on Redress meets.
17 July	Ms Sherree Limbrick commenced as the inaugural Chief Executive Officer of CPS Ltd.
2 August	Parish visit: Our Lady of Good Council Parish, Frenchs Forest.
3 August	Address: Professional Development Workshops at the Office of Director of Public Prosecutions, NSW.
10 August	Address: Dandenong Catholic Deanery Resource Dinner.
14 August	Royal Commission releases its report on <a href="#">Criminal Justice</a> .
16 August	Ecumenical Redress Conversation - attended by representatives of Anglican, Catholic, Salvation Army and Uniting Churches.
18 August	<a href="#">Royal Commission releases the Key Elements of a Child Safe Organisation</a>
21 August	Council members meet.
25 August	Address: South Australian Catholic Principals, Adelaide.
24 August	Address: Biennial National Catholic Education Media, Marketing and Communications Conference, Surfers Paradise.
29 August	Meeting of the Commonwealth Redress Taskforce Interjurisdictional Committee and non-government institutions, Brisbane.
29 August	CPS Ltd appoints two further directors, the Hon Michael Lavarch AO and Dr Robyn Miller to the Board.
22 September	Meeting of the Commonwealth Redress Taskforce, non-government institutions and insurance representatives, Sydney
5 October	Ecumenical Redress Conversation, attended by representatives of Anglican, Catholic, Salvation Army and Uniting Churches.
10 October	Address: Western Australian Bar Association.
17 October	Address: Lunchtime Conversation Series, University of the Third Age, Canberra.
18 October	<a href="#">Report of Case Study 45</a> tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.
19 October	Address: Catholic Community of Geelong, Geelong.
26 October	Minister for Social Services, Christian Porter, introduces Commonwealth Redress Scheme for Institutional Child Sexual Abuse Bill 2017 into the Federal Parliament.

- 1 November Federal Government's Independent Advisory Council on Redress meets.
- 4 November Address: Catholic School Parents Australia, Hobart.
- 9 November Address: Mackillop Family Services national leadership team, Melbourne.
- 13 November Council members meet.
- 14 November Address: Catholic Secondary Principals Australia, Adelaide.
- 15 November Meeting of the Commonwealth Redress Taskforce Interjurisdictional Committee and non-government institutions.
- 17 November Meeting of the Supervisory Group.
- 24 November [Address](#): Community of the Way, Trinity College, Perth
- 27 November [Workshop](#): National directors of Catholic Education
- 29 November Meeting of the Supervisory Group (face-to-face).
- 4 December CRA national redress meeting.
- 5 December [Report of Case Study 35](#) tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.
- 5 December Presentation to Conference of Directors of Catholic Education, Melbourne.
- 6 December [Report of Case Study 28](#) tabled in Parliament and released by the Royal Commission.
- 12 December [Council calls for COAG committee to implement Royal Commission's recommendations](#)
- 12 December Ecumenical Redress Conversation, attended by representatives of the Anglican, Catholic, Salvation Army and Uniting Churches.
- 12 December [The Royal Commission announced](#) it had delivered the reports of [Case Study 43](#) and [Case Study 44](#) to government, however, in line with the its terms of reference the Royal Commission had recommended the reports not be released to the public pending the resolution of current or future criminal or civil proceedings.
- 15 December The Royal Commission releases its [final report](#).  
[The Council welcomes the report](#) and called for the Church to act.

## 2018

- 22 January CPS Limited appoints a further director, Dr Ruth Shean to the board.
- 29 January CPS Limited appoints a further director, Dr Kerrie Tuite to the board.
- 8 February [Council backs PM's call](#) for states and territories to join proposed national redress scheme
- 9 February [Council provides a submission](#) on behalf of the Church to the Senate Community Affairs Legislative Committee inquiry into the *Commonwealth Redress Scheme for Institutional Child Sexual Abuse Bill 2017*.
- 12 February Address: NCEC

- 19 February [Council Chair appointed to Pope's peak child protection council](#)
- 6 March Council appearance on behalf of the Church at a public hearing of the Senate Community Affairs Legislative Committee inquiry into the *Commonwealth Redress Scheme for Institutional Child Sexual Abuse Bill 2017*.
- 9 March [TJHC calls on all states and for the Catholic Church in NSW and Victoria to join child abuse redress scheme](#)
- 22 March [Address: Concerned Catholics Archdiocese of Canberra and Goulburn](#)
- 26 April [CPS Ltd releases draft Safeguarding Standards for the Catholic Church in Australia](#)
- 30 April Address: CRA national redress meeting
- 30 April [The Truth Justice and Healing Council concludes its work](#) and is wound up as an entity within the Catholic Church in Australia
- 6 May Council provides the Church, through the Supervisory Group, with a [four-part report](#) of its work comprising:
- Volume One: Where from and where to: the Truth Justice and Healing Council, the Royal Commission and the Catholic Church in Australia'
  - Volume Two: The Royal Commission's recommendations and responses from the Truth Justice and Healing Council
  - Volume Three: What we have done: an activity report from the Truth Justice and Healing Council, 2013 to 2018
  - Volume Four: Emerging Themes: a snapshot of approaches taken by Church Authorities in Australia to formation, governance, legal and policy issues (2016)

## Engagement with the Royal Commission

To the end of April 2018 the Council:

- represented the Church and Church organisations at 20 Royal Commission public case study hearings including 17 that have focused primarily on different Church authorities and three which have indirectly included a Church authority;
- produced more than 386,000 documents from Church leaders and organisations sought by the Royal Commission;
- assisted more than 130 witnesses to prepare statements requested by the Royal Commission for the purpose of the public hearings and the preparation of those witnesses and others called before the Royal Commission to give evidence;
- made extensive written submissions in response to those of Counsel Assisting the Royal Commission on available findings following the case studies;
- consulted with Church authorities and stakeholder groups and prepared submissions on behalf of the Church to all 11 issues papers released by the Royal Commission, on:
  - Catholic Church Final Hearing
  - Advocacy and Support and Therapeutic Treatment Services
  - Risk of Child Sexual Abuse in Schools
  - Experiences of Police and Prosecution Responses
  - Statutory Victims of Crime Compensation Schemes
  - Redress Schemes
  - Civil Litigation
  - Preventing Sexual Abuse of Children in Out-of-Home Care
  - Child Safe Institutions
  - Towards Healing
  - Working with Children Check;
- consulted with Church authorities and stakeholder groups and prepared submissions on behalf of the Church in response to all six consultation papers released by the Royal Commission, on:
  - Civil Litigation
  - Responding to Complaints of Child Sexual Abuse
  - Out-of-home-care
  - Criminal Justice
  - Records and Record Keeping

- Information Sharing.
- attended Royal Commission round table meetings held to discuss topics including working with children checks, preventing sexual abuse of children in out-of-home care, civil litigation, redress and the operation of canon law;
- provided assistance to Church authorities and the Royal Commission in the collation of Church child sexual abuse data, the Royal Commission's analysis of which was released during Case Study 50 as 'Analysis of claims of child sexual abuse made with respect to Catholic Church institutions in Australia', along with an explanation of the 'weighted average' methodology used by the Royal Commission in its analysis;
- assisted with and coordinated Church contributions to Royal Commission research relating to child safety policy and procedure in schools and critically assessed the draft report, leading the Commission to revise its methodology; and
- attended numerous formal and informal meetings with the Chair and staff of the Royal Commission to ensure the smooth running of Royal Commission processes as they relate to the Church, and the full assistance and cooperation of Church authorities with the Royal Commission, in case studies and other processes.

## Engagement with survivors

Throughout the Royal Commission process the Council had regular and ongoing contact with many survivors of clerical child sexual abuse and many of their support and advocacy groups.

This contact took place in many different environments including at Royal Commission public hearings, in meetings organised by abuse survivor support groups, with individuals, both face to face over the phone and by email.

At all times the Council, generally through its CEO Francis Sullivan, took the approach of listening, offering assistance where possible and committing to taking concerns back to the Church leadership and ensuring they are considered as part of the overall approach to reforms within the Church.

Other members of the Council were also involved in consultation and engagement with survivors.

Among the key messages consistently heard from survivors was that they want to be believed, that they want to be treated fairly and justly, that they want to become part of a community, that they want the truth to come out and that they want the abuse that occurred to them to never happen to another child.

Survivors and their supporters also advocated for very specific changes in the way the Church and Church leadership engages with them on a number of issues including compensation and redress, civil litigation, support services and the provision of spiritual care.

Many of these calls for change were reflected in the Council's submissions to the Royal Commission and in other reform proposals currently being considered and implemented within Church authorities.

It would be inappropriate to list the names of individual survivors who have met with the Council, however the Council has been involved with survivor support and advocacy groups, or representatives or members of those groups including:

- |  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| ■ Blue Knot Foundation (formerly ACSA);            | ■ knowmore;                           |
| ■ Bravehearts Foundation;                          | ■ Lifeboat Geelong Foundation;        |
| ■ Christian Brothers Ex-Residents Services (CBERS) | ■ Lookout;                            |
| ■ Child Wise;                                      | ■ Lotus Place;                        |
| ■ CLAN;  | ■ Micah Projects;                     |
| ■ For the Innocents                                | ■ Moving Towards Justice, Ballarat;   |
| ■ In Good Faith Foundation                         | ■ Survivors and Mates Support Network |

## Engagement with the community

As part of its work the Council met with hundreds of different groups and organisations wanting to understand the issues, the work of the Royal Commission, the approach of the Council and what it all means for the Church and the broader community.

The Council met with groups including parishes, congregations and dioceses, and with priests, Church administrators, teachers, health professionals and Church welfare groups including:

- survivors and survivor support groups across Australia;
- Catholic dioceses and archdioceses Australia-wide;
- national meetings of CRA and the ACBC;
- parish meetings in all states and territories ranging in size from a handful of participants to more than 300;
- formal and informal meetings with priests and clergy, including the National Conference of Directors of Clergy;
- Catholic education, including the National Catholic Education Commission, Catholic education offices nationally, state-based gatherings of school principals, meetings with individual schools, and school parent groups including the national body of Catholic school parents, Catholic School Parents Australia and Catholic Conference of Religious Educators in state Schools;
- Catholic social services, including Catholic Social Services Australia, Catholic Social Services Victoria and individual providers nationally, including the St Vincent de Paul Society and MacKillop Family Services;
- Catholic professional standards offices including national and state-based consultations;
- Catholic Health Australia;
- other churches, including the Uniting, Anglican, Coptic Orthodox, Lutheran and Baptist churches and The Salvation Army;
- Catholic media, including editors of diocesan publications, and publications run by various religious orders, including *Eureka Street* which is run by the Jesuits;
- CathNews, a national daily online publication; and
- the Australasian Catholic Press Association.

In addition, the Council engaged with politicians, public servants and many non-secular groups including professional organisations within the legal, medical and health professions.

A list of community meetings and engagements is at [Appendix 4](#) - Council Community engagement meetings.



---

## Engagement with Church reform groups

Many Church reform groups and individuals have been particularly exercised by what they have heard from the Royal Commission and more generally about the state of the Church. Together they represent a ground swell of concern and a strong call for reform.

The Council attended several meetings of these groups and engaged with many lay people and Religious who have expressed similar concerns. Some of those groups include Catalyst for Renewal, Catholics for Renewal and Concerned Catholics in the Canberra-Goulburn Archdiocese.

---

## History and development of Church responses to child sexual abuse

The Church has made a concerted effort over the past 30 years to address the incidence, extent and management of child sexual abuse within its institutions.

Since the late 1980s the Church has developed and put in place a number of different approaches which have had varying levels of success.

The creation of the victim-focused processes in *Towards Healing* and *The Melbourne Response* in the mid-1990s were significant among these new approaches, as were the redress and support agendas developed by various religious orders at this time.

The Council recognised however that there have been considerable, justified criticisms of these approaches and has subsequently:

- called for and supported the Royal Commission's recommendation for an independent national redress scheme which would provide child sexual abuse survivors with consistent compensation regardless of where or when they were abused;
- acknowledged the need within the Church for more rigorous, autonomous oversight of Church processes, policies and standards for managing the safety of children and vulnerable adults within dioceses and religious orders; and
- acknowledged the need for transparent and accountable performance by bishops and religious leaders to established national safeguarding standards for children and vulnerable adults and the creation of safe environments.

Together these points represent a fundamental change in the way the Church approaches reparation for abuse victims, the management of child sexual abuse and the protection of children within the Church.

These changes reflect a deepening understanding over the past 30 years by those in positions of authority and influence of the child sexual abuse crisis within the Church and an increasing focus on properly addressing the issues inside a contemporary framework.

See [Appendix 5](#) - History and development of Church responses to child sexual abuse prior to the start of the Royal Commission.

## The Council: leading the Church's response during the Royal Commission process

The Council has made recommendations to the Church leadership on a range of matters related to systemic issues under consideration by the Royal Commission including:

- the establishment of an independent, government-sanctioned national redress scheme;
- establishment of CPS Limited, a new overarching Church body to set standards for the protection of children and vulnerable people involved in Church organisations and to audit and publicly report on the performance of Church authorities against those standards;
- significant changes to the way in which Church authorities approach civil claims related to child sexual abuse;
- guidelines as to how Church authorities should approach reconsideration of past settlement arrangements with child sexual abuse survivors; and
- recommendations for national reform or reform of the Church's policy position around a range of issues including redress, police reporting, child safe institutions, working with children checks, the sacrament of reconciliation, record keeping, information sharing and oversight of complaints handling.

### In its research role, the Council has:

- initiated research into best practice procedures, policies and structures to protect children;
- assisted in identifying systemic institutional failures that have impeded the protection of children;
- provided information to the Royal Commission concerning *Towards Healing*, *The Melbourne Response* and various other procedures, policies and structures that have progressively been put in place by Church authorities over the past 25 years to deal with complaints and instances of child sexual abuse;
- recommended constructive improvements which might be made to current policies and practices to provide greater protection for children; and
- assisted the Royal Commission by coordinating the collection of data on the extent of allegations of child sexual abuse in the Church for the Royal Commission's Catholic Church data project, the report of which was released during Case Study 50 in February 2017.

### In engaging with the community, the Council:

- initiated or attended meetings with individual survivors and survivor advocacy groups;
- made presentations at meetings of peak Catholic education, professional standards and social services organisations;
- attended meetings and made presentations at individual Catholic schools, parishes, education offices, education commissions and social services agencies;

- presented at the ACBC plenaries and CRA national conferences;
- made presentations to national meetings of clergy, bishops and leaders of religious orders; and
- undertaken research and surveys into the Catholic and broader community response to the abuse crisis in the Church, and other issues.

In representing the Church in the public arena the Council has:

- given more than 200 media interviews across print, radio, online and TV outlets;
- distributed some 190 weekly newsletters to more than 4,000 subscribers;
- issued over 180 media releases and other statements to both Catholic and secular media;
- developed and maintained the Council's website; and
- attended and spoken at well over 120 stakeholder and parish meetings.

## Catholic Church Initiatives

Since the commencement of the Royal Commission the Council worked with Church leaders, administrators, professional service providers and professional standards personnel to develop new approaches to dealing with many of the major issues identified throughout the course of the Royal Commission.

### Redress for abuse survivors

The Council called for an independent, national redress scheme that will provide consistent compensation, administered by the Commonwealth Government but paid for by the institution responsible the abuse.

The Council supported the Royal Commission's recommendations following the release of the Redress and Civil Litigation report in September 2015.

During 2016-7, Francis Sullivan, Council CEO, was a member of the Federal Government's Independent National Redress Advisory Council.

All metropolitan archbishops again committed to the scheme during the Catholic Church Final Hearing (Case Study 50) in February 2017.

The Council's advocacy on this issue has continued. This has included [making a submission to a 2018 Senate inquiry](#) into early legislation to establish a Commonwealth redress scheme and Francis Sullivan appearing to give evidence around that submission.

To time of writing, despite calls from the Prime Minister for them to do so, all states are yet to commit to the scheme. Until such time as they do so, it is not possible for state-based non-government institutions, such as Church authorities, to participate in the scheme.

A national redress scheme, if established, will be a lasting legacy of the Royal Commission.

### New Entity - Catholic Professional Standards Ltd

After a 'Green Paper' process and significant consultation, Catholic Professional Standards Limited (CPS Ltd), a company limited by guarantee, was established in November 2016 to set, monitor and report on standards for the protection of children and vulnerable people in the Church.

CPS Ltd will augment existing child safety standards legally required for schools, social services and health and hospital services such that similar requirements will exist across all ministries of the Church in which children participate, including for example children participating in parish-based activities.

CPS Ltd is functionally independent of the Church and represents a dramatic change to the accountability of bishops and congregational leaders.

The CPS Ltd board comprises seven eminent lay professionals and the inaugural Chief Executive Officer commenced in the role in July 2017.

In early 2018 CPS Ltd announced that it expects to release the first draft of its new standards, based largely around the Royal Commission's ten recommended key elements of a child safe organisation in the coming months.

An outline of the CPS Ltd 'Green Paper' consultation process is at [Appendix 6](#) - Catholic Professional Standards 'Green Paper' Consultation Process.

### Model Litigant Guidelines

Model Litigant Guidelines for use by Church authorities responding to civil claims for child sexual abuse were released by the Council in November 2015. The Guidelines provide each Church authority with advice for providing child sexual abuse survivors wishing to commence civil proceedings with an entity to sue, ensuring that the so-called 'Ellis defence' is no longer used by the Church.

The Church's Model Litigant Guidelines are at [Appendix 7](#) - Guidelines for Church authorities in responding to civil claims for child sexual abuse.

### Guidelines for revisiting claims

Over the past four years many Church authorities have committed to revisiting claims settled in the past, making adjustments to payments and other compensation provided to child sexual abuse survivors where past settlements have been found by today's standards to be lacking in some respect. In November 2014, the Council released guidelines for responding to requests from survivors of child sexual abuse whose complaints have previously been subject to settlement under the *Towards Healing* protocol or at common law, regardless of whether or not a deed of release was signed. Using the guidelines, claims and payments have now been revisited extensively by many Church authorities across Australia.

The Church's guidelines are at [Appendix 8](#) - Guidelines for responding to requests from survivors of child sexual abuse whose claims have been subject to settlements.

### The Australian Catholic Ministry Register (ACMR)

As at June 2017 more than 1,000 priests and male religious were registered on a new national Catholic database maintained by the NCPS, which allows Church authorities to check the background of priests and brothers visiting or moving to their region, to ensure they are of good standing.

The ACMR, for the first time, provides up-to-date, online information on whether a priest or male religious has faculties, holds a current working with children check and has been 'licensed' to work in a diocese or congregation.

### Council participation in Federal Redress Advisory Council

On 16 December 2016, the Federal Attorney-General announced the a 15-member Independent Child Sexual Abuse Redress Advisory Council. The Advisory Council provided expert advice to the Commonwealth as it designed a national redress scheme for the survivors of institutional child sexual abuse. Francis Sullivan, CEO of the Council, was a member of the Advisory Council.

## The impact of the Council's work

The Council contributed to reviews by individual Church authorities of existing practices, which led to the introduction of many new child protection policies and procedures across Australia.

The Council has sought to embed a culture of child safety at all levels of the Church, including:

- improved processes including reviewing child protection standards and procedures;
- building new child safeguarding systems;
- establishing standards and adopting better practices and policy;
- taking on new staff and establishing child protection divisions within dioceses and religious institutes;
- introduction of training for Church personnel;
- developing processes for revisiting past claims; and
- seeking innovation in pastoral approaches to survivors.

In its final report, the Council has sought to highlight a number of issues that arose during its work that the Church needs to confront as it strives to deliver justice to the survivors of child sexual abuse and restore its credibility.

---

## Royal Commission June 2014 Interim Report

On 30 June 2014, the Royal Commission submitted its two-volume interim report to the Governor General and state governors.

[Volume 1](#) described the work the Royal Commission to that point, the issues being examined and the work which it considered still needed to be done.

[Volume 2](#) set out in summary form 150 personal stories from people who shared their experience of abuse with the Royal Commission in private sessions. The Royal Commission described these stories as a representative sample of the stories it had heard.

In the interim report the Royal Commission asked governments to extend its final reporting date by two years, from December 2015.

On 2 September 2014, the then Commonwealth Attorney-General, George Brandis, announced an extension of the Royal Commission's reporting date to December 2017.



---

## Council's 2014 Activity Report

In December 2014, the Council released an Activity Report recording its activities over the previous two years as it drove the Church's reform agenda and led the Church's response to the Royal Commission.

It recorded the Council's engagement with the Royal Commission, the development of the Church's position in the public policy debate, the work with survivors and their representatives and the Council's role as the public voice of the Church in the Royal Commission process.

The report also recorded some of the key concerns and issues the Council had become increasingly aware of as it engaged with the thousands of people who have been involved with and affected by the child sexual abuse crisis within the Church.

The report also identified the key issues and concerns which had emerged from the Royal Commission process to that point.

Read the Council's 2014 Activity Report [here](#).

## Data on the extent of child sexual abuse within the Church

During the period October 2014 to February 2017 the Council provided assistance to the Royal Commission and Church authorities nationally in relation to a major data collection and analysis project undertaken by the Royal Commission, in which it sought to obtain and collate data relating to all allegations of child sexual abuse occurring within the Church in the period 1950-2010.

The Royal Commission's analysis of the data gathered as a result of this Catholic Church data project was released in a report tendered in February 2017 during Case Study 50, and subsequently updated in June 2017.

A copy of the Royal Commission's final (updated) data report, dated 1 June 2017, is available [here](#).

A copy of the explanatory document detailing the 'weighted average' approach used by the Royal Commission in its analysis, tendered in February 2017 during Case Study 50, and subsequently updated in June 2017, is available [here](#).

The Royal Commission's use of the weighted average approach in its analysis is discussed in this report further below.

The Royal Commission's analysis of the data draws on various sources:

- data collected from Royal Commission private hearing sessions, in which individuals attended a meeting with one or two of the Royal Commissioners and Royal Commission staff including counsellors and support people and gave details including where, when, who, how and the impact of the abuse; and
- data from individual Church authorities including dioceses, congregations, Catholic Church Insurance Ltd (CCI) and others.

The latter data set was collected with the assistance of the Council.

### Royal Commission private sessions data

At the time its final report was released, the Royal Commission reported on its website that during the period of its operations it held a total of 8,013 private sessions. People who attended a private session had the opportunity to tell one or more Commissioners about their experience of child sexual abuse in institutional contexts. As well as speaking about their abuse, the institution, the perpetrator and the institutional response, people who attended private sessions often described their experience of disclosure and the impacts of abuse.

During the Royal Commission's final hearing, Case Study 57, in March 2017, the Royal Commission heard evidence relating to the extent of institutional child sexual abuse drawn from information collated during Royal Commission private sessions.

Volume 5 of the Royal Commission's final report provides more detail about the private session information the Royal Commission gathered to May 2017 (6,875 private sessions had been conducted at that point). Reference should also be had to Volume 16, which contains more information gathered from private sessions about the experiences of survivors abused in religious institutions, including the Church. The Royal Commission has reported that:

- survivors who attended a private session were most often males aged over 50;
- over one in three adult survivors who attended a private session described sexual abuse in an historical residential institution;
- the institution types most commonly reported to the Royal Commission were managed by religious organisations, with these institutions accounting for 58 per cent of all reports by survivors in private sessions;
- of those reporting abuse in a religious institution, over 60 per cent reported that this occurred in a Catholic institution;
- survivors reported abuse as occurring in over 1,000 Catholic institutions.

See [Appendix 9](#) - Royal Commission private session information overview.

### Royal Commission clerical sex abuse data collection project

During the period October 2014 to February 2017 the Council was involved in the Royal Commission's Catholic Church Data Project, which was designed to collect and collate all available information on clerical and other child sexual abuse during the period 1950-2010 from Church authorities in Australia.

At all times, the Council engaged with the Royal Commission positively and endeavoured to ensure the provision by Church authorities of all information sought by the Royal Commission.

The data project involved several stages: a data gathering stage, a cleaning stage and an analysis stage. As well as obtaining data for claims made against Church authorities for the period 1950-2010, the Royal Commission also undertook an additional survey to obtain data about the number of priests and male religious in ministry during that time.

The Council assisted the Royal Commission in particular with:

- scoping the project and identifying Church authorities to be surveyed;
- provision of completed survey responses by Church authorities, including assisting Church authorities to complete the claims data survey as required and following up on survey responses that were delayed;
- discussion around the 'cleaning' process used by the Royal Commission to ensure the quality of the raw claims data obtained as far as possible. This involved, for example, the identification and removal of duplicate data (for example ensuring that claims included in the survey response of two different Church authorities was only included in the data set to be analysed once);
- during the 'cleaning' process, assisting the Royal Commission to follow up with Church authorities any inaccuracies the Royal Commission identified in claims data sets it received when these were compared with data the Royal Commission had already obtained from other sources including CCI and the NCPS;
- development of a process which ensured that Church authorities who provided a survey response were provided with a copy of their 'cleaned' claims data set by the Royal Commission, so that they were in a position to approve that data set prior to the Royal Commission commencing any analysis;

- facilitation and assistance with the priestly and male religious ministry survey; and
- input into the Royal Commission's approach to definitions and classification of ministry types.

During this time, the Council encountered issues which required clarification. Primary amongst these was discussion of the definitions the Royal Commission had used in the survey, particularly the definition of 'claim'. Simply put, for the purposes of the survey, a 'claim' included any approach by an individual to a Church authority about an alleged incident of child sexual abuse, where some form of redress was sought. This did not require that the alleged abuse was ever investigated, substantiated or proven.

The issue with this was that from at least 1996, in many cases the nature of the Church response was pastoral. Due to the difficulty compiling evidence, and/or where the person against whom the complaint was made had died, the task of substantiating the claim was often too difficult. Thus, the claim often stood without investigation.

Claimants were believed and a response made by the Church authority without the claimant having to establish their claim to any recognised standard of proof. In some cases, the Church authority did not investigate the claim but accepted something had occurred and elected to assist the claimant. In some cases, the Church authority investigated the claim and accepted or substantiated it. In some other cases the claim was investigated and found to be unsubstantiated.

The data survey did not differentiate between these different responses, rather they all fell into the definition of 'claim' for the purposes of the data survey.

Thus, the data collected by the data survey is of 'claims' of abuse, not of substantiated abuse. At best, the data is an estimate of the extent of the claims of abuse made against the Church over the selected period. This was acknowledged by the Royal Commission in the final data report.

In the same way, the data survey report represents the Royal Commission's analysis of the data sets it obtained. The Royal Commission elected to use various statistical methods in its analysis, including, in the case of the priests and religious ministry survey, methods of imputation and a calculation of the proportion of priests and male religious against whom claims had been made that used a 'weighted average' approach rather than the raw data. The method of analysis was the Royal Commission's decision and other than seeking to understand the methodology used and the results generated, the Council had no input into this stage of the data project.

### Catholic Data Project Report

Regardless of the methodology used in analysis, the statistics revealed in the data assembled from Church authorities in Australia by the Royal Commission is nothing short of appalling. Once collated and analysed by the Royal Commission, the data revealed:

- 4,445 people made claims, that is, they came forward between 1980 and 2015 and alleged they had been sexually abused by personnel associated with the Church, during the period 1950 to 2010.
- There were 1,880 alleged perpetrators identified, including:
  - 693 non-ordained religious;
  - 572 priests;

- 543 lay people; and
- 72 with an unknown status.
- Claims have been made against 7.9 per cent of diocesan priests and 5.7 per cent of religious priests who ministered in Australia between 1950 and 2010.
- Overall, claims have identified 7 per cent of priests in ministry between 1950 and 2010 as alleged perpetrators.
- Claims identified in 1,049 separate Church institutions in which abuse occurred, in particular:
  - 46 per cent of claims were for conduct that occurred in schools; and
  - 29 per cent of claims were for conduct that occurred in orphanages or residential facilities.
- 41 per cent of all claims were made against members of five male religious orders; the Christian Brothers, the De La Salle Brothers, the Patrician Brothers, the Marist Brothers, and the St John of God Brothers.
- Just over \$268 million has been paid out by Church authorities in relation to claims, including \$250 million in monetary compensation at an average of around \$88,000 per claim.

Further information on the Royal Commission's data collection project can be found at [Appendix 10](#) - Analysis of claims of child sexual abuse made with respect to Catholic Church.

### Section 6P referrals and prosecutions

In the opening address for Case Study 50, Counsel Assisting stated that as at February 2017 the Chair of the Royal Commission had made 309 referrals to police, in all states and the ACT in relation to allegations of child sexual abuse involving Church institutions.

As a result of those referrals, as at February 2017 there were:

- 27 prosecutions;
- 75 matters under investigation;
- 37 cases in which the victim or the accused had died; and
- 66 pending matters (meaning that a referral had been made, and the Royal Commission was waiting for information about allocation of the matter within the receiving agency).

In relation to the remaining 104 referrals, some have been used for intelligence purposes, while for others there was insufficient evidence or the complaint had been withdrawn.

---

## Royal Commission Public Hearings

The Royal Commission conducted much of its work through public hearings, which were formal and followed proceedings which were similar to those in a court of law.

The Royal Commission identified matters it considered appropriate for a public hearing and brought them forward as individual 'case studies', presided over by one or more of the six commissioners.

There were differing reasons for the Royal Commission's selection of case studies. Where investigations or private sessions identified a significant concentration of abuse in one institution, it was more likely that the institution would be investigated via a public case study hearing. The Royal Commission's decision to conduct a case study was also informed by whether or not the case study would advance understanding of systemic issues and provide an opportunity to learn from previous mistakes.

Some case studies were historic in nature, dealing with institutional structures which no longer exist. In other cases, the institutional structures or culture that contributed to or enabled abuse to occur continued, but the relevance of the lessons to be learned was confined to the institution which was the subject of the case study. In still other cases the systemic or institutional factors considered had relevance to many similar institutions in different parts of Australia.

Public case study hearings were also held to assist the Royal Commission's understanding of the extent of abuse which may have occurred in particular institutions or types of institutions, to enable the Royal Commission to understand the systemic or cultural issues that influenced the way in which various institutions were managed and how they responded to allegations of child sexual abuse.

Each case study focused on the bravely told stories of individual survivors. Case studies assisted in the development of public understanding of the nature of child sexual abuse, the circumstances in which it occurred in institutions and, importantly, the devastating impact it had on survivors' lives.

Through the public case study hearings, the Royal Commission explored learnings that might be taken from the fact of the abuse and the institutional response to it. In this way, the findings and recommendations for future change which the Royal Commission has made in its final report have a secure foundation.

## Royal Commission public case study hearings involving the Catholic Church in Australia

When the Royal Commission completed its schedule of public hearings in March 2017, Church authorities had participated in 20 of the Commission's 57 public case study hearings held over almost four years.

The public hearings involving the Church, for the most part, followed a similar pattern and lasted for one to two weeks.

Counsel Assisting the Royal Commission (**Counsel Assisting**) determined which witnesses to call and the order they were to appear, as well as leading the examination of witnesses. Like a court, in a case study hearing, witnesses gave their evidence under an oath or affirmation.

Survivors or survivor representatives were usually called first and given the opportunity to tell their story, by reading their witness statement and then answering questions from Counsel Assisting about the abuse they suffered and the way the Church responded when the abuse was reported. They then may have also been examined by any party with leave to appear. This included legal representatives for the Council and Church authorities and their own legal representative if they had one. The commissioners may also have asked witnesses questions.

In most cases Church legal representatives did not question survivors. It was the Council's policy that this was a time for survivors to be heard, with some telling their stories for the first time in public.

Following evidence from the survivors, representatives from the Church authorities appeared and gave evidence. In total, more than 130 witnesses from Church authorities appeared before the Royal Commission in the Church's 20 case studies. Most were assisted in this process by the Council.

Many Church witnesses spent from several hours to more than a day in the witness box.

Church witnesses typically provided the Royal Commission with a prepared written statement, which was tendered into evidence. They were often also questioned by the presiding commissioners and barristers representing the survivors. Barristers engaged by the Council and Church authorities then re-examined, if necessary.

Counsel Assisting's examination of Church witnesses explored issues including whether Church leaders had knowledge of the abuse and the response of the relevant Church authority to complaints about the abuse. Witnesses were generally taken through documents the Royal Commission had obtained under its powers to compel production of information.

Case study hearings usually finished with the Church authority, typically represented by the current bishop or congregational leader, giving evidence.

Each case study concluded with Counsel Assisting and the parties engaging in a written submission process regarding the findings available to the Commission on the evidence (discussed later in [Council legal engagement with the Royal Commission](#)) before the Commission retired to consider its final report for the case study.

## Case Study No 4: The experiences of four survivors with the *Towards Healing* process

### Archdiocese of Brisbane, Diocese of Lismore and the Marist Brothers

December 2013, Sydney

This public hearing explored the experiences of four people who engaged with the *Towards Healing* process which is the Church's protocol for responding to complaints of abuse against Church personnel, operating in all parts of Australia (other than the Archdiocese of Melbourne, where *The Melbourne Response* operates).

Since its introduction in 1996, the introduction to each version of *Towards Healing* has stated that the protocol '*establishes public criteria according to which the community may judge the resolve of Church leaders to address issues of abuse within the Church. If we do not follow the principles and procedures of this document, we will have failed according to our own criteria*'.

Having now been operating for almost 20 years, *Towards Healing* is the only national redress scheme in Australia for victims of child sexual abuse. During this time, *Towards Healing* has succeeded in offering and providing valuable assistance and support to many survivors. However, as was acknowledged by the Council and Church authorities in the context of this case study, it has not always worked as it should have.

In this case study the Royal Commission sought to examine the operation of *Towards Healing*. The Royal Commission chose four quite different stories and demonstrated that people can experience *Towards Healing* differently, depending upon factors such as when they went through the process, the Church authority involved, and their own expectations. The case study also demonstrated the changes and differences in the implementation of *Towards Healing* over time.

The hearing involved complaints of child sexual abuse against Church personnel in the Archdiocese of Brisbane, the Diocese of Lismore and the Marist Brothers, between 1998 and 2012 by:

- Mrs Joan Isaacs, who was abused by a priest from the Archdiocese of Brisbane in 1967-68, and engaged with *Towards Healing* just after its inception from 1997;
- Mr DG, who was abused by a Marist Brother in the early 1970s, and contacted the Marist Brothers in early 2000;
- Mr DK, who was also abused by a Marist Brother in 1980-81, and who went through *Towards Healing* in 2010; and
- Ms Jennifer Ingham, who was abused by a priest from the Diocese of Lismore in 1978-82, and contacted the Diocese and engaged in the *Towards Healing* process in 2012.

Church witnesses who were involved in the *Towards Healing* process for each of the four survivors were examined about their understanding and implementation of *Towards Healing* in their respective roles, their recall of relevant events at the time and their communication with the survivors.

The Archbishop of Brisbane, Mark Coleridge, the then bishop of Lismore, Geoffrey Jarrett, and the then provincial of the Marist Brothers, Br Jeffrey Crowe, all gave evidence. Each apologised for the abuse that the survivors had suffered and for the way aspects of the respective cases were handled.



## Royal Commission report of Case Study No 4

### Released 11 February 2015

In its report, the Royal Commission identified a range of systemic issues associated with the operation of *Towards Healing* over time:

- the lack of separation under *Towards Healing* of the pastoral response and payment for services such as counselling, from the payment of reparation;
- the lack of separation of the responsible Church authority from investigation or assessment of a complaint and the criteria for determining an amount of reparation;
- the extent of involvement of the responsible Church authority in decisions about the amount of reparation paid;
- the role of legal and insurance advisers in negotiations and decisions about the amount of reparation paid;
- the role and importance that apologies from the responsible Church authority can often have in healing for survivors;
- the importance of listening to, and clear communication with survivors at all stages of the *Towards Healing* process;
- the need for consultation with survivors about *Towards Healing* processes including the appointment of facilitators or mediators;
- the independence of decision makers involved in the *Towards Healing* process (that is, their independence from the institution where the abuse is alleged to have occurred);
- the harm that the inclusion of confidentiality clauses in settlement documentation can cause survivors;
- legal representation of survivors involved in the *Towards Healing* process;
- funding for legal representation of survivors involved in the *Towards Healing* process; and
- disciplinary action against those accused of abuse, and the issue of 'what should be done about priests and religious who commit child sexual abuse offences'.

The Royal Commission also made a number of findings in relation to the facts of the four case studies it examined, including:

- that directors of professional standards acting as facilitators in *Towards Healing* matters raise a real potential for an actual or perceived conflict of interest given that the director is employed by the Church;
- that the Marist Brothers failed to act proactively to remove an offender from ministry when complaints were made against him in the 1980s and again in the 1990s; and
- that the Marist Brothers breached the 1992 ACBC *Protocol for Dealing with Allegations of Criminal Behaviour* in that they did not refer complaints received against a brother to the relevant Special Issues Resource Group.

The Royal Commission's consideration of *Towards Healing* in this and following case studies provided important background and context for its consideration of the issue of redress for survivors, leading to its 2015 redress report, in which the Royal Commission recommended the establishment of a national redress scheme in Australia and identified the required elements of such a scheme.

## Case Study No 6:

The response of a primary school and the Toowoomba Catholic Education Office to the conduct of Gerard Byrnes

### **Diocese of Toowoomba**

February 2014, Brisbane

Case Study 6 examined the response by a primary school and the Catholic Education Office in the Diocese of Toowoomba (TCEO), to child sexual abuse that occurred in a classroom at the school.

The hearing examined the circumstances in which 44 child sexual assault offences were committed by Gerard Byrnes, a teacher in a primary school in the Diocese of Toowoomba. The offences were committed relatively recently, between January 2007 and November 2008, against 13 girls in Byrnes' classes, who were then aged between eight and 10 years.

At the time, credible disclosures of child sexual abuse made by some of the girls were received by senior and experienced staff at the school and the TCEO, but were not reported to police or acted upon in line with existing, approved TCEO policies and procedures. Byrnes remained employed, and upon resigning his position, was re-employed as a relief teacher.

The Royal Commission heard evidence from the parents of children who were sexually abused by Byrnes, staff and former staff at the school, staff and former staff of the TCEO, the former bishop of Toowoomba Bishop Bill Morris and a representative of the Queensland Non-State Schools Accreditation Board.

Bishop Morris gave evidence about his involvement with the case following Byrnes' arrest. Bishop Morris told the Royal Commission there had been a number of significant systemic failings which led to the failure to properly deal with the abuse at the time of the initial complaint. These ranged from failing to report suspected abuse to police, to re-engaging Byrnes as a casual teacher after he had left his permanent teaching position.

Bishop Morris acted decisively in response to these failings by terminating the employment of the school principal and two officers of the TCEO. Bishop Morris also acted promptly in reaching out to survivors' families to offer compensation and support.

Bishop Morris told the Royal Commission that the abuse by Byrnes had been the catalyst for major changes within the TCEO that led to significant improvements in diocesan child protection policies and procedures.

### **Royal Commission report of Case Study No 6**

#### **Released 12 February 2015**

In its report, the Royal Commission found that in not following the policy and procedures in place for reporting the allegations of abuse made against Byrnes the then principal of the school failed in his responsibilities: he failed to report the allegations to police, he minimised the allegations in disciplinary correspondence sent to Byrnes and arranged for Byrnes to be hired as a relief teacher even though he was aware that serious allegations of improper conduct had been made against him.

Further findings of failure were made against two former TCEO employees, for not adequately responding to the allegations when they were informed of them by the principal. This included a failure to report the allegations up the line to the TCEO management, which resulted in the deputy director and director of the TCEO and Bishop Morris having no knowledge of the allegations until much later when Byrnes was arrested.

No adverse findings were made against other staff at the school.

The Royal Commission approved of the response of Bishop Morris to the abuse once he was informed of it. This included steps he took in establishing an independent investigation, dismissing Hayes, Hunter and Fry when they were found to have failed in their duties, taking early steps to engage with the victims and their families, arranging mediation of claims and ensuring fair compensation was paid.

The Royal Commission also noted the various improvements the TCEO has made in its approach to child protection since the abuse came to light, including updating of policies and procedures, recruitment of dedicated child protection officers and more comprehensive training programs.

## Case Study No 8: Mr John Ellis' experience of the Towards Healing process and civil litigation

### Archdiocese of Sydney

March 2014, Sydney

This case study closely examined the response of the Archdiocese of Sydney to the complaint made by Mr Ellis under *Towards Healing* and to the subsequent civil claim which he brought in relation to the abuse he had suffered.

Mr John Ellis was sexually abused from about 1974 to 1979 by Fr Aidan Duggan, a priest of the Archdiocese of Sydney. Fr Duggan continued to abuse Mr Ellis in his early adult years.

Mr Ellis commenced his *Towards Healing* process in June 2002. At this time, Fr Duggan was alive, but was suffering dementia. A central issue from the outset was whether Fr Duggan was able to respond to Mr Ellis' complaint. However, the processes provided in the *Towards Healing* protocol to overcome this were not followed. Eventually the *Towards Healing* claim progressed to facilitation but did not resolve at that time. Mr Ellis commenced legal proceedings seeking damages from the Archdiocese, Cardinal Pell and the trustees of the Archdiocese. The proceedings were strongly defended by the Archdiocese.

Cardinal George Pell, who was Archbishop of Sydney during the period under consideration, as well as witnesses from the Archdiocese, and others involved in the Church's dealings with Mr Ellis including the Professional Standards Office and archdiocesan legal advisors, gave evidence.

The Royal Commission considered their respective roles in the management of Mr Ellis' *Towards Healing* process, the reparation negotiations, management of the litigation, defences taken during the proceedings and communications, both internally and with Mr Ellis.

Cardinal Pell was questioned about the circumstances of the Ellis case and personally apologised to Mr Ellis, saying the Archdiocese had failed in its moral and pastoral responsibilities to him.

The Cardinal agreed with the Council's stated policy that in civil claims Church authorities should provide a legal entity that is capable of responding to proceedings. He also agreed that the Archdiocese should go back and look at past payments under *Towards Healing*.

### Royal Commission report of Case Study No 8

#### Released 11 February 2015

In its report, the Royal Commission found that the Archdiocese of Sydney fundamentally failed Mr Ellis in the *Towards Healing* process and key personnel had not complied with the principles of *Towards Healing*.

It also found that the Archdiocese had not given Mr Ellis the assistance demanded by justice and compassion when determining the amount of reparation offered to him, and by not providing him with a spiritual director.

The Royal Commission also found that:

- the Archdiocese of Sydney failed to conduct the litigation with Mr Ellis in a manner that adequately took account of his pastoral and other needs as a victim of sexual abuse;

- the Archdiocese wrongly concluded that it had never accepted that Fr Duggan had abused Mr Ellis. This conclusion allowed Cardinal Pell to instruct the Archdiocese's lawyers to maintain the non-admission of Mr Ellis's abuse; and
- the Archdiocese accepted the advice of its lawyers to vigorously defend Mr Ellis' claim. One reason Cardinal Pell decided to accept this advice was to encourage other prospective plaintiffs not to litigate claims of child sexual abuse against the Church.

The Royal Commission agreed with Cardinal Pell's evidence that the Archdiocese, the trustees and he as Archbishop, did not act fairly from a Christian point of view in the conduct of the litigation against Mr Ellis and its aftermath, including the length of time taken to inform Mr Ellis that the Archdiocese would not pursue the costs of litigation awarded against him, which had an adverse effect on Mr Ellis's health.

## Case Study No 9: The responses of the Archdiocese of Adelaide, and the South Australian Police, to allegations of child sexual abuse at St Ann's Special School

### Archdiocese of Adelaide

March 2014, Adelaide

This case study looked at the responses of the Archdiocese of Adelaide and the South Australian Police to allegations of child sexual abuse at St Ann's Special School.

St Ann's Special School in Adelaide was owned and operated by Catholic Special Schools Incorporated (CSSI). It was established in 1975 and became Our Lady of La Vang School in 2013. The school catered for 50 to 60 students with intellectual disabilities ranging from a moderate to profound level of severity, who were aged between five and 20 years old. Many of the children enrolled at the school had limited communication abilities.

Brian Perkins was born on 20 February 1936. Perkins applied for a job at St Ann's as a bus driver in or around 1986. The job required him to take children with intellectual and communication disabilities to and from the school each day unsupervised. He had several previous convictions for child sexual abuse and dishonesty offences.

While employed at St Ann's between 1986 and 1991 Perkins abused several students. The extent of this offending is difficult to quantify given the difficulty that some of his victims have in communicating. He was eventually convicted of offences relating to three St Ann's students in 2003 and was sentenced to 10 years and six months imprisonment with a non-parole period of six years. He died in custody.

The Royal Commission looked at the monitoring, supervision and oversight of Perkins' activities as an employee and volunteer and the response of South Australian Police, the school principal and board to allegations of Perkins' abuse in 1991 and the later response of the school, Catholic Education South Australia (CESA) and the South Australian Police in 2001.

The Royal Commission heard about failures in communication at the school level, as well as failures by the South Australian Police, which ultimately enabled Perkins to skip bail and flee to Queensland in 1993. In 1998, it was discovered Perkins was living in Queensland, but police declined to apply to extradite him on the basis of inaccurate information, including the seriousness of the charges against him. This meant that Perkins was not arrested and brought to trial in South Australia until the Archdiocese encouraged the police to extradite him in 2002.

The disabilities of some of the students at the school meant they were not able to confirm whether they had been abused. This was problematic for the application of *Towards Healing*, which contained a threshold requirement that a survivor make a complaint of abuse in order to commence the protocol. To overcome this, the Archdiocese of Adelaide, under the leadership of Archbishop Philip Wilson, devised a group approach to redress, which did not require any report or proof of abuse, but was based on an assessment of the risk of abuse of each student. Using this approach the Archdiocese made ex gratia payments totaling \$2.3 million to the students and their families.

## Royal Commission report of Case Study No 9

### Released 4 June 2015

The Royal Commission found that a lack of a requirement at the time for employers to conduct a police check on employees enabled Perkins, to work as a bus driver at a special school in Adelaide despite his criminal history.

In 1986, St Ann's was not required to conduct a police check as part of its pre-employment processes. Neither the school nor the CESA had established mechanisms in place for the conduct of these checks.

The Royal Commission found that in the period 1986-2001:

- key, senior school personnel failed to follow correct procedure at critical moments, contributing significantly to the tragedy and aggravating the impact of the abuse;
- in 1991 the principal did not inform the board of management, the board of governors or the director of CESA of the allegations against Perkins, despite requirements to do so;
- school personnel including the principal did not comply with its policy requiring that volunteers be supervised by a registered teacher, creating further opportunities for Perkins to sexually abuse children in his care;
- CESA did not have a policy on the provision of respite care to students by school employees or volunteers; and
- the school failed to ensure when the allegations against Perkins first came to light in 1991 that the matters were fully reported and investigated and that families concerned were informed and children protected.

The hearing also examined the nature of the investigation undertaken by the South Australia Police into Perkins and found that a series of failings, combined with poor practices and systems, contributed to years of delay in bringing him to trial, including that:

- poor systems and practices within the South Australian Police resulted in the police failing to arrest Perkins in 1991 when they had an opportunity to do so;
- in 1991 and 1993, officers who investigated Perkins who had not received specialised training in child sexual abuse and child protection or in investigating sexual offences against children with disabilities took child complainant statements; and
- the South Australian Police did not inform the broader school community of the sexual allegations against Perkins, despite being aware that other former students with intellectual disabilities and limited verbal capacity may have had contact with Perkins.

The Royal Commission also considered the later response of the school, CESA and the South Australian Police in the period from 2001 and found that:

- from 2001, the families of former students of St Ann's and the Archdiocese of Adelaide actively urged the South Australian Police to extradite Perkins, with the Archdiocese offering to pay the costs of the extradition; and



- the Archdiocese's group approach to compensation did not suit all families, and fell short in terms of its level of consultation and communication with victims and their families, however it resulted in many victims receiving compensation that they otherwise may not have received.

The Royal Commission also noted significant improvements made to policy and procedure by CESA since 2001, including the creation of new principal consultant positions to provide an initial point of contact for reporting abuse allegations to CESA.

## Case Study No 11:

The Christian Brothers' in Western Australia response to child sexual abuse at Castledare Junior Orphanage, St Vincent's Orphanage Clontarf, St Mary's Agricultural School Tardun and Bindoon Farm School

### Christian Brothers

April 2014, Perth

This case study was designed to enable the Royal Commission to bear witness to the terrible abuse and hardship suffered by some children who spent time in institutions.

The case study examined the experiences of men who were resident at four Christian Brothers' residential institutions in Western Australia, Castledare Junior Orphanage, St Vincent's Orphanage Clontarf, St Mary's Agricultural School Tardun, and Bindoon Farm School, in the 1940s and 1950s. The four institutions operated from the late 1920s and closed down between the 1960s and 1980s.

During the hearing in Perth, 11 former residents gave evidence and made allegations of sexual abuse against 16 named brothers, which occurred between 1947 and 1968. The abuse occurred in dormitories, in brothers' rooms, during movie screenings and in the grounds. It also involved brothers watching boys naked in the showers. Most of the boys did not report the abuse; one of those who did was physically beaten.

Evidence was given by a current and former provincial of the Christian Brothers, and also by the former chairperson of the Christian Brothers Ex-Residents Services (CBERS), a support service for ex-residents, established by the Christian Brothers.

The Royal Commission also heard evidence from lawyers involved in a class action against the Christian Brothers from 1993 to 1996 and considered the approach taken by the plaintiffs' solicitors in attempting to deal with forum and limitation of action problems and the Christian Brothers' defence and settlement of the action, via the establishment of an independent trust to determine the claims.

Also giving evidence were:

- representatives of the WA Department of Child Protection and Family Support, in relation to the inspections of the institutions undertaken by officers of the former Child Welfare Department and the current practice of that Department;
- the WA Department of Local Government and Communities in relation to the Redress WA scheme which operated 2008-2011; and
- the Deputy Director of Public Prosecutions, in relation to current and former policies for prosecuting historic cases of child sexual abuse in WA.

The Royal Commission examined the Christian Brothers' approach to formation of young men entering the Order during the relevant period, whether that may have contributed to the abuse that occurred, and subsequent changes in the Order's approach to formation.

During his evidence the Deputy Provincial of the Christian Brothers Province of Oceania, Br Julian McDonald, gave undertakings to provide survivors with ongoing professional psychological counselling, for life if needed, and to re-examine any cases settled on unjust and unreasonably low terms.

## Royal Commission report of Case Study No 11

### Report released 19 December 2014

The Royal Commission report notes the widespread sexual and physical abuse of children that occurred in the four institutions. The Royal Commission found that from 1919 at least until the 1960s, the relevant Christian Brothers' Provincial Council knew of allegations of sexual abuse against some brothers in institutions run by the Christian Brothers around Australia.

The Royal Commission found that from 1947 to 1968, leaders of the Christian Brothers failed to manage the four WA institutions so as to prevent the sexual abuse of children living there.

The Royal Commission also found that:

- state authorities played a limited role at the time contributing to the lack of access the boys had to adults outside the institutions, to whom they may have disclosed their conditions, including the abuse; and
- the Christian Brothers failed to provide all boys at the institutions with an opportunity to obtain an education.

In considering the Christian Brothers' response to the former residents, the Royal Commission was critical of the Order's management of the class action litigation. It also found however that in the 1990s, the Christian Brothers took a number of positive actions, including:

- issuing an apology to the former residents in 1993;
- giving financial and other support to the Child Migrant Friendship Society;
- funding assistance for family tracing services;
- setting up a trust fund to give financial assistance to child migrants;
- facilitating access to counselling services;
- establishing Christian Brothers Ex-Residents Services (CBERS) in 1995; and
- commissioning a study of child abuse within the Order in 1998.

The Royal Commission noted that since the 1970s the Christian Brothers had made changes to the way candidates for the Order are recruited and trained. The practice of taking men into the Christian Brothers before they finish secondary school has been discontinued, with candidates now being required to have a tertiary qualification and complete a psychological assessment prior to entry.

### Case Study No 13:

The response of the Marist Brothers to allegations of child sexual abuse against Brothers Kostka Chute and Gregory Sutton.

#### **Marist Brothers**

June 2014, Canberra

In this case study the Royal Commission examined the response of the Marist Brothers to child sexual abuse perpetrated by Br John Chute, also known as Br Kostka, and former brother, Gregory Sutton, from the early 1960s through to the late 1980s in schools in NSW, Qld and the ACT.

The Royal Commission also considered the steps taken by the Marist Brothers and CCI to resolve claims for compensation brought against the Order in respect of the abuse by Sutton and Chute. To a lesser extent, the Royal Commission also considered the response of agencies including the NSW Department of Family and Community Services to reports of child sexual abuse perpetrated by Br Chute and former brother, Sutton.

At the time of the case study, Chute had allegations of sexual abuse made against him by 48 different individuals across NSW and the ACT. The allegations dated from as early as 1960, through until 1993. Chute was removed from teaching in November 1993. In January 2008 Chute was charged with 19 counts of child abuse against six former students in the ACT and, after pleading guilty, was sentenced to six years' imprisonment.

Sutton taught in Qld, the ACT and NSW from 1973 until he was removed from teaching in 1987. The Marist Brothers have received allegations against Sutton from 21 individuals. In 1996 Sutton was extradited from the USA where he was living after leaving the Order, and he was charged and convicted in NSW of 67 sexual offences against 15 different children.

Former provincial Br Alexis Turton was questioned over his role in the handling of allegations against both Chute and Sutton. Particular interest centred on the circumstances in which Sutton was sent to Canada by the Marist Brothers for psychological treatment in 1989. Sutton himself was called to give evidence about the events at that time, the first time a perpetrator had been called to give evidence during a public hearing.

During the hearing the Provincial of the Marist Brothers, Br Jeffrey Crowe, acknowledged the cases of Brothers Chute and Sutton were horrendous and inexcusable, and that failures of communication and inaction, including from some in leadership, had had tragic results. He re-stated the commitment of the Marist Brothers to deal compassionately and justly with all survivors of abuse. He said that the Order would review past settlements if asked to do so, to ensure they are fair, reasonable and compassionate.

#### **Royal Commission report of Case Study No 13**

#### **Report released 11 December 2015**

The Royal Commission found that until the 1990s accusations or admissions of sexual misconduct by Marist Brothers were treated as highly confidential. Information concerning child sexual abuse was usually held by the provincial and, with some rare exceptions, was not passed on to their successors or to the Provincial Council. Between 1962 and 1993, allegations of child sexual abuse were not reported to police by the Marist Brothers. Before 1992, nothing was kept in writing concerning the reasons for transfer of brothers nor, before 1983, were written records kept of allegations against, or admissions by, brothers.

The Royal Commission found that the Marist Brothers leadership knew about a number of allegations and admissions of child sexual abuse by Br Chute in the period between his entry into the Marist Brothers in 1958 and his removal from teaching in 1993 but continued to transfer him from school to school. In one particular case, a failure to act by one provincial in 1986 resulted in a missed opportunity to remove Chute from teaching and from contact with children at a much earlier time than the date he was removed, 1993. This had tragic consequences.

In 1985 Br Sutton commenced teaching at St Carthage's Primary School, Lismore. In 1987, he was removed from this school. Although described as being due to problematic interpersonal relationships with staff, the Royal Commission found his removal occurred only after:

- a number of complaints of inappropriate behaviour with primary school age children, primarily girls;
- a direction given by the school's executive to refrain from that conduct, which Br Sutton breached soon after by being alone and in physical contact with two girls;
- a final warning about this conduct; and
- a subsequent further allegation.

The Royal Commission found that reasons for his removal were couched in terms of issues with interpersonal relationships with staff rather than issues to do with inappropriate conduct with children. Complaints were not reported to the police and consecutive provincials did not pass on information regarding Br Sutton's behavior to their successors and the Provincial Council, a fact the Royal Commission found also reflected very poorly on the Marist Brothers' approach to these matters through the relevant period.

The Royal Commission considered the approach taken by the Marist Brothers to litigation commenced in the ACT by victims of Chute. Br Crowe acknowledged that the Order had made use of available legal defences, including the so-called 'Ellis' defence, until matters moved to mediation, when the Order sought to settle the matters quickly and justly.

The Royal Commission deferred its consideration of evidence placed before it during the case study about the current policies and approach of the Marist Brothers to child protection until a later case study. This did not directly occur, although some consideration of updated information was undertaken by the Royal Commission in Case Study 50, the Catholic Church Final Hearing.

## Case Study No 14:

The response of the Diocese of Wollongong to allegations of child sexual abuse against John Gerard Nestor, a priest of the Diocese

### Diocese of Wollongong

June 2014, Sydney

In this case study the Royal Commission considered the canonical procedures that operate to discipline and prevent priests accused of child sexual abuse from exercising ministry, and, ultimately to dismiss them from the priesthood. It looked at the relationship between diocesan priests, bishops and the Holy See (the Vatican), and identified that the procedures are complex and there has historically been confusion about who has jurisdiction over allegations of child sexual abuse by priests within the dicasteries of the Holy See, and long delays.

These issues were considered in the context of steps taken by successive bishops of the Diocese of Wollongong against a diocesan priest, John Gerard Nestor. After an initial complaint was received in 1993, Fr Brian Lucas was asked to interview Nestor. In 1996 Nestor was charged with and convicted of child sexual abuse offences, but acquitted on appeal.

During this time, the Diocese became aware of further complaints against Nestor, and separately undertook an investigation into the complaints under the *Ombudsman Act 1974* (NSW), as a result of which three of four complaints were sustained. Despite the criminal acquittal, Bishop Philip Wilson and subsequently Bishop Peter Ingham held serious reservations about Nestor and formed the view that he was not a suitable person to work in ministry and/or with children.

The Royal Commission heard about the canonical steps taken by Bishops Wilson and Ingham to place Nestor on administrative leave, and subsequently to dismiss him from the priesthood. Nestor appealed their actions and lengthy canonical processes involving the Holy See ensued. Ultimately, Pope Benedict XVI dismissed Nestor from the priesthood in October 2008.

The Royal Commission heard evidence from now Archbishop Philip Wilson and Bishop Ingham, as well as from Fr Brian Lucas, diocesan priests and diocesan officers involved in the civil and canonical processes relating to Nestor. Both bishops told the Royal Commission they would have offered to resign as bishops if Nestor had not ultimately been dismissed from the priesthood.

### [Royal Commission report of Case Study No 14](#)

#### Report released 19 December 2014

The Royal Commission highlighted the complexity of canon law procedures that the Diocese was required to follow in the late 1990s, and the difficulties these posed for bishops seeking to have priests dismissed from the priesthood.

The Royal Commission was supportive of the steps then Bishop Wilson took to remove Nestor from ministry and apply for his dismissal from the priesthood. It was critical however of the nearly five and a half years the Apostolic Signatura (the highest judicial authority in the Church other than the Pope) took to make a decision in favour of the Diocese. During this time Nestor went abroad and undertook some public ministry, including as part of a university chaplaincy. There is evidence that he also celebrated public mass at an aged care facility in Sydney when he returned.

The Royal Commission also made findings critical of Fr Brian Lucas' practice of not taking notes of the interviews he had with Nestor about the allegations of child sexual abuse. The Royal Commission found that Fr Lucas should have made a contemporaneous record of what was said in his meeting with Nestor. Significantly, it found that an outcome of Fr Lucas' practice was to ensure that there was no written record of any admissions of criminal conduct, in order to protect the priest and the Church.

The Royal Commission also found that, once he received the decree from the Pope in 2008, Bishop Ingham should have made it known publicly that Nestor had been dismissed from the priesthood because of findings of child sexual abuse and other inappropriate conduct made against him.

The Royal Commission has subsequently consulted and considered issues associated with information sharing in the context of institutional child sexual abuse, and findings and recommendations are included in its final report.

## Case Study No 16: The Melbourne Response

### Archdiocese of Melbourne

August 2014, Melbourne

In this case study the Royal Commission examined the principles, practices and procedures of *The Melbourne Response* and the experience of people who had engaged with *The Melbourne Response* process or otherwise sought redress from the Archdiocese of Melbourne.

*The Melbourne Response* is a redress process put in place by then Archbishop George Pell in the Archdiocese of Melbourne in 1996. *The Melbourne Response* was intended to respond to allegations from people who were sexually abused by priests and personnel of the Archdiocese of Melbourne.

The case study explored the elements of *The Melbourne Response* including:

- the activities of the independent commissioners, who are senior barristers of the Melbourne Bar engaged to investigate allegations of sexual abuse and determine factually whether the abuse occurred;
- a professional support service, known as Carelink, which is responsible for facilitating counselling and other support services for survivors; and
- a compensation panel of eminent specialists who make recommendations to the Archbishop of Melbourne as to the amount of ex gratia compensation the Archdiocese should pay to each survivor, subject to a cap, initially set at \$50,000 and increased to \$55,000 in 2000 and \$75,000 in 2008<sup>1</sup>.

Each of these elements are funded by the Archdiocese, but operate independently of the Archdiocese. The Royal Commission heard that the average payment under *The Melbourne Response* between 1996 and 31 March 2014 was around \$32,000. The total average expenditure, including legal costs, counselling and medical support was approximately \$100,000.

During the case study, the Royal Commission heard evidence from three people who had sought redress under *The Melbourne Response* for child sexual abuse: Mrs Christine Foster, whose two daughters were abused, Mr Paul Hersbach, and another survivor known as AFA. It also heard evidence from Archbishop Hart and Cardinal Pell, the independent commissioners, archdiocesan legal advisors, representatives of Carelink and the compensation panel and the archdiocesan business manager.

A particular focus of the hearing was the tragic story of the Foster family.

At the hearing, Archbishop Hart announced the engagement of retired Federal Court Judge, the Hon Donnell Ryan QC, to review aspects of *The Melbourne Response*, including how the amount of compensation to be paid should be determined, whether the cap on payments, which at that time was set at \$75,000 should be increased and whether compensation amounts previously paid to survivors should be reviewed. He also told the hearing that he was of the view that the Church should provide victims of child sexual abuse with an entity to sue. He advised the Royal Commission that if civil proceedings were brought against the Archdiocese in the future, he would ensure there was an entity to sue.

---

<sup>1</sup> Most recently the cap for claims made under *The Melbourne Response* has been lifted to \$150,000 following the recommendations of the Ryan report.



This case study provided the Royal Commission with an opportunity to inquire into the structure, processes and operation of *The Melbourne Response* in the context of its broader consideration of redress schemes.

### [Royal Commission report of Case Study No 16](#)

#### **Report released 14 September 2015**

The Royal Commission made a range of comments about the operation, and personnel involved with the administration, of *The Melbourne Response*.

The report contains factual findings about events that occurred in the lead up to the announcement of the establishment of *The Melbourne Response* and in relation to the handling of particular claims made by the Foster family, Paul Hersbach and AFA.

While the Royal Commission's report is written in a narrative style and does not contain any adverse findings or recommendations about *The Melbourne Response*, it was critical of aspects of its establishment and current operation, including the independence and consistency of each element of the process and the potential for conflict of interest. It was also concerned about advice provided to survivors relating to police reporting.

The Royal Commission was critical of the appointment of Professor Ball to co-ordinate Carelink given his previous role providing treatment and expert evidence services for priests of the Archdiocese who had been accused or charged with offences.

The Royal Commission found that the fact that the three elements of the process (the independent commissioners, Carelink and the compensation panel) share the same lawyers as the Archdiocese, created potential for conflict and difficulties maintaining confidentiality.

The Royal Commission also commented that a process so heavily dominated by lawyers and traditional legal process is unlikely to provide the most supportive environment for survivors. Further, a lack of guidance material for independent commissioners and the compensation panel as to their roles and responsibilities, allowed for inconsistency in the way different individuals performed in the same role.

The Royal Commission also noted however that to December 2014, around 97 percent of complaints to *The Melbourne Response* had been upheld.

As it had in relation to Case Study 14, the Royal Commission again expressed its concern regarding the application of canon law by dicasteries of the Holy See in Rome, noting that there was a lack of clarity around the canonical process to dismiss an offending priest from the priesthood. The Royal Commission further examined the operation of canon law through a private round table and as part of Case Study 50, the Catholic Church Final Hearing.

### Case Study No 26:

The responses of the Sisters of Mercy, the Archdiocese of Rockhampton and the Queensland Government to allegations of child sexual abuse at St Joseph's Orphanage, Neerkol

#### **The Institute of the Sisters of Mercy of Australia and PNG and the Diocese of Rockhampton**

April 2015, Rockhampton

This case study examined the experiences of a number of men and women who were resident at St Joseph's Orphanage, Neerkol, operated by the Sisters of Mercy, Rockhampton, between 1940 and 1975. It also examined the responses of the Sisters of Mercy, Rockhampton (now part of the Institute of the Sisters of Mercy of Australia and PNG (ISMAPNG)), the Diocese of Rockhampton and the Queensland State Government to complaints of child sexual abuse by workers, priests and nuns at the orphanage made by former residents of Neerkol, from 1993 to date.

The St Joseph's Orphanage Neerkol was located on a property about 20km out of Rockhampton and operated between 1885 and 1978. In 2000 the Neerkol property was sold by the Sisters of Mercy and the funds generated used to establish the Order's Professional Standards Office and fund its response to former residents, victims and survivors of abuse.

Between 1993 and 1996, before the implementation of *Towards Healing*, four former residents of the orphanage brought their experiences of sexual abuse at Neerkol directly to the attention of bishop Heenan, then bishop of Rockhampton and Sister Berneice Loch, then congregational leader of the Sisters of Mercy Rockhampton. The hearing traced the experiences of the survivors and the response of the Diocese and the Sisters to these reports.

During the hearing 12 former residents gave evidence detailing the serious emotional, physical and sexual abuse by priests, nuns and grounds workers. Another survivor, AYB, who was not a former resident at the orphanage, also gave evidence of sexual abuse that she suffered by the Neerkol parish priest. The Royal Commission also heard evidence from the former bishop of Rockhampton, Bishop Brian Heenan, Sr Berneice Loch, Institute Leader of ISMAPNG, who had been congregational leader of the Sisters of Mercy Rockhampton during the period relevant to the case study and Ms Di-Anne Rowan, who was congregational leader of the Sisters of Mercy Rockhampton through the period that the Order's response to the former residents was developed and implemented.

Case Study 28 followed an earlier Queensland state inquiry, the Forde inquiry, which was commissioned to inquire into institutions established or licensed under Queensland legislation to determine whether there had been abuse, mistreatment or neglect of children. That inquiry made findings, released in 2000, that child sexual abuse was perpetrated by a range of persons at Neerkol, including members of foster families to whom children were sent on holidays, male workers at the orphanage, regular male visitors to the orphanage and priests stationed at the orphanage. The findings of the Forde report were accepted by Church witnesses and relied upon by the Royal Commission for the purposes of the case study.

#### **Royal Commission report of Case Study No 26**

#### **Report released 21 April 2016**

The Royal Commission traced the institutional response to the complaints received from former residents over time. The Royal Commission noted that before mid to late 1996, Bishop Heenan and Sr Loch received little or no training in understanding child sexual abuse and responding to complaints of child

sexual abuse. Their lack of training in detecting and responding to child sexual abuse undermined their capacity to deal effectively with early complaints of sexual abuse by former Neerkol residents, made in the era before *Towards Healing*, between 1993 and mid to late 1996. The Royal Commission found that this contributed to a lack of adequacy and compassion in the initial response to the former residents.

Having been somewhat slow to initially respond, in early 1997 the Sisters of Mercy, Rockhampton formed a professional standards group to formulate processes and guides for the response to, and prevention of, child sexual abuse.

The Royal Commission was 'satisfied the Diocese and the sisters settled compensation claims with former residents, despite legal advice they were in a strong position to defeat the claims because of the age of the claims'. This was in contrast with the Queensland State Government, which fought the claims and refused to contribute to the settlement arrangement.

The Royal Commissioners also heard about a lack of Queensland departmental policies or procedures for reporting abuse by officers of the department. The Royal Commission found that the Queensland State Government failed to adequately supervise and protect children for whom it was guardian from harm by not ensuring there was adequate supervision and scrutiny over their living conditions. The former residents gave evidence that they did not tell anyone, including government inspectors, about the abuse at the time it was occurring. Some did not tell anyone because they had no-one to tell, others because they did not think they would be believed.

The Royal Commissioners found that the punishment administered by some nuns and employees at Neerkol was cruel and excessive and did not accord with the regulations in place under the relevant legislative framework.

The Royal Commission noted that the Sisters of Mercy sold the property on which Neerkol had been situated in order to fund settlements and the operation of the professional standards office the Sisters of Mercy established to provide ongoing assistance to the former residents, a service that continues today.

## Case Study No 28: Catholic Church authorities in Ballarat

### **Diocese of Ballarat and the Christian Brothers**

May and December 2015, February and April 2016 Ballarat and Melbourne

The Royal Commission commenced this case study with the stated intention of inquiring into the response of the Diocese of Ballarat and of other Church authorities in Ballarat to allegations of child sexual abuse against clergy or religious, and the impact on the Ballarat community of the abuse. It also looked at the response of Victoria Police to allegations of child sexual abuse against clergy or religious which took place within the Diocese of Ballarat. However, following the first stage of the hearing in May 2015, the Royal Commission recognised that further work was required and expanded the scope of the case study.

The case study was broken into three stages, heard between May 2015 and April 2016.

Stage one was held in Ballarat at the Ballarat Magistrates Court in May 2015. Stage two was held at the County Court of Victoria in December 2015. Stage three commenced on 22 February 2016 and was heard at the Ballarat Magistrates Court.

Although initially called to give evidence in person in Melbourne during stage two, for health reasons, Cardinal George Pell gave evidence by video link from Rome over three days from 29 February 2016 in relation to this case study and Case Study 35 relating to the Archdiocese of Melbourne. The Royal Commission sat in Sydney for Cardinal Pell's evidence.

### **Stage One**

The first stage of the case study was concerned primarily with the impact of child sexual abuse on survivors who were abused by clergy and religious in various Catholic institutions in the Diocese of Ballarat. Seventeen male survivors gave evidence about their experiences.

Evidence was given by representatives of community organisations, Moving Towards Justice and the Ballarat Centre for Sexual Assault, about the community impact of sexual abuse that occurred in Catholic institutions in the region.

The Royal Commission also heard evidence from a psychiatrist, Associate Professor Carolyn Quadrio, about recent studies reviewed in the literature and her experience of the wide ranging psychological effects, both long- and short-term, of child sexual abuse. Current Church leaders, Bishop Paul Bird, Bishop of Ballarat, and Br Peter Clinch, Provincial of the Christian Brothers, also gave evidence.

During stage one the Royal Commission also heard extensive evidence from Gerald Ridsdale, a former priest of the Diocese of Ballarat who to the time of the hearing had been convicted of some 138 offences against children over the period of the late 1950s until the early 1990s, involving 53 victims.

### **Stage Two**

The second part of the case study was primarily concerned with the knowledge of the former bishop of Ballarat, Bishop Ronald Mulkearns and priests in the Diocese of Ballarat, of allegations of child sexual abuse by clergy and religious in the Diocese. The hearing also examined the response of the Diocese to allegations, including the movement of offending priests from one parish to another.

The Royal Commission heard evidence from a further seven survivors and related witnesses about their experiences. Eight current and former priests in the Diocese of Ballarat gave evidence relating to their time as priests of the Diocese, their role, and recollections of matters discussed with Bishop Mulkearns during meetings of the diocesan consultors.

In that hearing, the Royal Commission also heard evidence about the response of the Diocese of Ballarat and Victoria Police to complaints against Monsignor John Day, who committed offences against children in Mildura in the early 1970s. The Royal Commission heard from two witnesses who were former officers with Victoria Police, including Denis Ryan, a police officer and whistle-blower, who was demoted after he attempted to move against Monsignor Day and former chief commissioner Mick Miller, who was in the role from 1977 until 1987.

### Stage Three

The third part of the case study focused on the response of the Christian Brothers in Victoria to allegations of child sexual abuse made in relation to six Christian Brothers, all of whom spent time working at schools in the Diocese of Ballarat. It heard evidence from survivors who were former students of St Patrick's College Ballarat as to their experiences of abuse and the response of the Christian Brothers.

The Royal Commission also heard further evidence about the response of the Diocese of Ballarat including about Bishop Mulkearns' referral of priests to psychologists and other treatment providers following complaints of child sexual abuse. Retired psychiatrist Dr Peter Evans, gave evidence regarding his recollection and experience treating priest offenders.

Although ill, Bishop Mulkearns, who was bishop of Ballarat for 26 years from 1971 until 1997, gave some limited evidence on 26 February 2016 as to his recollection of relevant events. He was unable to continue or complete his evidence before his death on 4 April 2016.

### [Royal Commission report of Case Study No 28](#)

#### Report released 6 December 2017

The publicly released version of the Royal Commission's report contains significant redactions

#### Introduction to the report

In the introduction the Royal Commission provided a summary of the interaction between the Royal Commission and solicitors for the Church parties in relation to the application of the rule in *Browne v Dunne* to evidence heard in this case study. The discussion in particular relates to the view taken by the Royal Commission of the operation of its practice guidelines (paragraph 69), and the Royal Commission's conclusion that its findings in this case study were consistent with the guidelines.

The Royal Commission also noted in its report that in reaching findings, it applied the civil standard of proof, requiring 'reasonable satisfaction' as to the particular fact in question in accordance with the principles in *Briginshaw v Briginshaw*, stating that no findings critical of any person were made solely based on that person not recalling historical events.

The Royal Commission included in the introduction to the report:

- a detailed discussion of the evidence of Bishop Finnigan, a former priest of the Diocese of Ballarat and Auxiliary Bishop of Brisbane, who had been called to a private hearing of the Commission in June

2015 before he gave evidence in part 2 of the public hearing in December 2015. The Royal Commission found that 'in the public hearing, Bishop Finnigan sought to give evidence that was more protective of either the Church or himself than evidence he had given previously'.

- A discussion of 'gossip' and the knowledge among priests and the general community in Ballarat of the activities of offenders including Ridsdale. Here the Royal Commission acknowledged that while talk about Ridsdale in particular was widespread in the Catholic community, its findings were based on the available evidence having regard to the standard of proof it needed to apply.

## The Christian Brothers

### Structure of the Christian Brothers

The events considered in this case study occurred in the St Patrick's and Holy Spirit Provinces of the Christian Brothers. The Royal Commission considered the structure and operation of the Congregation of the Christian Brothers, noting that the provinces were governed by the provincial, supported by a provincial council.

The Royal Commission found that *'the Christian Brothers, similar to other Catholic orders, have a structure in which ultimate power and responsibility rests with one person: the provincial. A system without checks and balances has the obvious potential for mismanagement or abuse of that power and neglect of that responsibility'*.

### Knowledge of the Christian Brothers

The Royal Commission considered evidence of the knowledge and response of provincials and provincial councils to allegations of child sexual abuse made against several brothers who taught in Ballarat Catholic schools. It found that in the early to mid-1970s there were widespread rumours about the Christian Brothers' sexual misconduct around boys and those rumours were known by many, if not most, of the students in St Alipius and St Patrick's College.

Damning findings are made about the actions of several provincials, who moved offending brothers to new positions after receiving complaints against them, including Br Mackey, Br Naughtin, Br Chappell, Br Noonan and Br Faulkner. The Royal Commission found that in failing to remove those brothers and instead appointing them to teaching positions at other schools, the Christian Brothers prioritised the reputation of the order over the welfare of children.

In one case, the Royal Commission found that a brother had been appointed to a new teaching role even though at least three of the four members of the provincial council at the time were aware of complaints made against him.

Other brothers in positions of responsibility including headmasters of Christian Brothers schools, were found to have consistently and unreasonably declined to ask for sufficient detail of complaints, and/or failed to report all complaints received to the provincial.

It found that provincials should have ensured records were retained rather than destroying personnel and other records at the conclusion of their terms, so that knowledge of previous complaints was passed on to subsequent provincials.

The Royal Commission found that the systems and procedures that allowed brothers to be transferred to new teaching positions, and those which condoned this occurring without the administration or the community at the new school being informed of the risk they posed were completely inadequate and unsatisfactory. No effort was made to restrict the access of these brothers to children.

The Royal Commission also criticised the strategy employed by the Christian Brothers after criminal charges had been laid against Br Dowlan, which involved an investigation process that caused complainants distress.

### The Diocese of Ballarat

The Royal Commission considered the structure and operation of the diocese, noting that it covered roughly half of the geographic region of Victoria and consisted of 51 parishes.

The Royal Commission's investigation centred on the knowledge of relevant authorities in the Diocese of Ballarat, including Bishop Ronald Mulkearns and the diocesan consultors in the period 1960-1990, of allegations of child sexual abuse made against four priests of the diocese, Gerard Ridsdale, John Day and two other priests whose names have been redacted.

The Royal Commission made damning findings against former bishops of the diocese, Bishop O'Collins and particularly Bishop Mulkearns, and against members of the diocesan College of Consultors, in relation to their knowledge and management of allegations made against Day and Ridsdale.

### Knowledge of the Diocese

#### Day

The Royal Commission found that Bishop Mulkearns, the Vicar General Fr Madden, some priests of the diocese and some teachers at Catholic schools in Mildura had received complaints or were aware of allegations that Day sexually abused children by January 1972. These were investigated by Victoria Police. The Royal Commission found that Bishop Mulkearns' statement *'that he had been assured that police have satisfied themselves that there is no substance to the charges' 'was consistent with an utter disregard for the safety and wellbeing of children in Mildura. It was consistent with a concern to protect the reputation of Monsignor Day and the Church and avoid scandal...'*

The Royal Commission ascribed knowledge of Day's activities and the allegations against him to the diocesan College of Consultors for various reasons, including advice received from Bishop Mulkearns and seeing a newspaper article.

The Royal Commission found that for Bishop Mulkearns to appoint Monsignor Day to the parish of Timboon despite his awareness of the allegations which had been made against him, was unacceptable. It further found that for the consultors to raise no objection to this appointment was also unacceptable.

In relation to the Victoria Police investigation into Day, the Royal Commission made damning findings that a senior officer effectively offered in January 1972 Superintendent O'Connor effectively offered investigating officer Detective Ryan a promotion if he discontinued his investigation of Day, before preventing him from being involved in or continuing his investigation of the allegations against Day. Ryan was subsequently transferred after he continued to investigate Day despite orders to cease.



## Ridsdale

The Royal Commission noted that for the duration of his career as a priest, Ridsdale's appointments were unusually short.

It found that by late 1975 Ridsdale had admitted to Bishop Mulkearns that he had offended against children. Bishop Mulkearns did not report Ridsdale to the police or take any notes of this 1975 meeting in order for there not to be a record of Ridsdale's history of sexual abuse of children.

The Royal Commission made damning findings against Bishop Mulkearns, including that he transferred Ridsdale from parish to parish in full knowledge that he had abused children, showing a reckless indifference for the welfare and safety of children. In this, Bishop Mulkearns' overwhelming concern was to protect his diocese and the Church from further scandal rather than responding to the pastoral need of parishioners.

The Royal Commission also found that Bishop Mulkearns made false statements in interviews with CCI in 1993, 1994 and 1995 about the extent of his knowledge of Ridsdale, in order to limit his responsibility for his handling of Ridsdale at that time and subsequently.

The Royal Commission found that it was inconceivable that the priest consultants of the diocese did not know of Ridsdale's abusing by 1976, given the usual practice of Bishop Mulkearns to explain the circumstances of a move in consultants meetings and the state of general knowledge in the community at this time. The Royal Commission said it was also inconceivable that subsequent appointments of Ridsdale did not invite discussion among the consultants, who should have objected to the moves.

The redacted parts of the final report for this case study will be made public by the government following the completion of investigations and/or proceedings in due course.



## Case Study No 31: Retired Bishop Geoffrey Robinson

August 2015, Sydney

This case study was convened to hear the evidence of retired Bishop Geoffrey Robinson, priest, canon lawyer and former auxiliary bishop of Sydney.

The Royal Commission heard evidence from Bishop Robinson regarding his experience as a priest in the 1960s and 70s, his membership of the College of Consultors of the Archdiocese of Sydney, and his role as an auxiliary bishop of the Archdiocese of Sydney for over twenty years.

Bishop Robinson gave evidence about his knowledge of the history and development of the Church's response to child sexual abuse from the 1970s and his experience being in a leadership role in the Church when he was given responsibility for co-ordinating the Church's response to child sexual abuse, via his appointment to the Bishops' Committee for Professional Standards in 1994. Here he had a pivotal role in the development and subsequent amendment of *Towards Healing*, a response which was unique in the Church in the world.

During his evidence Bishop Robinson also told the Royal Commission about the operation of Encompass Australasia, a national therapy program established for priests and religious which operated between 1997 and 2008. He gave wide ranging evidence about the operation of canon law in relation to child sexual abuse and his discussions with senior Vatican officials around the issues in the late 1990s and early 2000s, which indicated that the understanding of authorities in Rome was well behind that which existed in other countries including Australia.

### **Royal Commission report of Case Study No 31**

The Royal Commission did not release a report relating to this case study.

## Case Study No 35: Archdiocese of Melbourne

November 2015, Melbourne

The Royal Commission inquired into the response of the Archdiocese of Melbourne to allegations of child sexual abuse against Fr Searson, a priest of the Archdiocese, while he was parish priest of the Holy Family Parish, and Holy Family Primary School, Doveton.

It also inquired into the response of the Archdiocese of Melbourne to allegations of child sexual abuse against other clergy of the Archdiocese, including Fr Wilfred Baker, Fr David Daniel, Fr Nazareno Fasciale, Fr Desmond Gannon, Fr Paul Pavlou and Fr Ronald Pickering, during the period from the mid- to late-1980s until 1996.

The case study commenced on Tuesday 24 November 2015 in Melbourne. It resumed in Sydney for three days from 29 February 2016 to hear evidence by video link from Cardinal George Pell.

The Royal Commission heard evidence from survivors as to their experiences of abuse. It also heard evidence in relation to the response of relevant authorities within the Archdiocese of Melbourne, including the former archbishop, Frank Little, members of the Archdiocesan Curia and officials of the Catholic Education Office, Melbourne (CEOM), about their response to allegations of child sexual abuse against Fr Searson. Cardinal Pell gave evidence about his time as an auxiliary bishop of Melbourne with responsibility for the region encompassing Doveton and his interaction with CEOM personnel in responding to complaints about Searson's conduct.

This case study also examined the structure of the Archdiocese of Melbourne at the time and the way in which the then archbishop, Archbishop Frank Little, managed complaints. It also examined the role and responsibilities of the archbishop as a decision maker.

### [Royal Commission report of Case Study No 35](#)

#### **Released 5 December 2017**

The publicly released version of the Royal Commission's report contained redactions.

As it did in the report for Case Study 28, the Royal Commission noted in its report that in reaching findings, it applied the civil standard of proof, requiring 'reasonable satisfaction' as to the particular fact in question in accordance with the principles in *Briginshaw v Briginshaw* (1938) 60 CLR 336. It stated in particular that where it was reasonably satisfied as to a fact or circumstance, the appropriate finding was made, while no findings critical of any person were made solely based on that person not recalling historical events.

#### **Archdiocesan structure**

The Royal Commission considered the structure and operation of the Archdiocese of Melbourne, noting that it consisted of 216 parishes, and was divided into four geographic regions. It found that the Archbishop had primary responsibility for the Archdiocese, assisted by the Vicar General, Auxilliary Bishops, the Curia, College of Consultors and, from 1986, the Personnel Advisory Board. It found that the Archbishop had ultimate responsibility for the management of priests.

## **Searson**

The Royal Commission considered in detail the case of Fr Peter Searson, a priest of the Archdiocese about whose conduct many complaints were made over many years, and noted that his case was remarkable in terms of the volume of complaints received and the number of personnel of the Archdiocese to whom they were made.

The Royal Commission made adverse findings against several bishops and priests of the archdiocese, and some senior CEO employees, in relation to their inaction, or inadequate action, following receipt of complaints against Searson.

The Royal Commission found that, in general terms, personnel of the Archdiocese adopted an approach that allegations against Fr Peter Searson were not proved or were unsubstantiated. This was in spite of evidence that CEO staff believed the allegations made against him were credible and held serious concerns about his character and conduct. The Commission found that there was no rational basis for the conclusion that the complaints were unsubstantiated but by doing so, those personnel could justify their inaction in relation to Searson.

Adverse findings were also made against Archbishop Little, to whom there was evidence that many complaints had been reported, failed to act in response. The Commission found that by October 1986, the complaints Archbishop Little was aware of were sufficient for any reasonable person to form the view that Searson should be removed from ministry.

The Royal Commission found that by not removing Searson in response to the complaints about his conduct at Doveton, Archbishop Little 'objectly failed to protect the safety and wellbeing of children'.

## **Other priests of the archdiocese against whom complaints were made**

Further damning adverse findings were made against Archbishop Little and other personnel of the archdiocese in relation to their management of complaints made in respect of the abusive conduct of other priests of the archdiocese, including Wilfred Baker, Ronald Pickering, Nazereno Fasciale, Kevin O'Donnell, Desmond Gannon and David Daniel.

## **Culture of secrecy**

The Royal Commission found that there was a prevailing culture in the archdiocese at the time, led by Archbishop Little, of secrecy, and dealing with complaints internally to avoid scandal to the Church. There was a habit of not recording complaints in writing and using euphemistic language in correspondence and records relating to complaints of child sexual abuse.

## **Lack of response to victims**

In addition, the Royal Commission found during this time that archdiocesan personnel failed to offer victims of abuse any assistance and failed to report the conduct of the abusers to police.

## **Victoria Police**

In this case study the Royal Commission considered the conduct of Victoria Police in the context of its examination of the Searson matter. It found deficiencies in investigations into complaints made about Searson and Fasciale in 1990 and 1994 respectively.

It also found that the Victoria Police had inadequate record management practices in place at this time.

The redacted parts of the final report for this case study will be made public by the government following the completion of investigations and/or proceedings in due course.

## Case Study No 41: Disability service providers including Mater Dei School, Camden

### **Sisters of the Good Samaritan, Good Samaritan Education**

July 2016, Sydney

The Royal Commission inquired into the responses of disability service providers to sexual abuse of children with disabilities. The Royal Commission examined three 'vignette' stories, one of which was the response of Mater Dei, a school for children with disabilities operated by the Sisters of the Good Samaritan (and now Good Samaritan Education), to allegations of child sexual abuse allegedly suffered by students of the school in and around 1991. The responses of police and community services to the reports at the relevant time were also considered.

The Royal Commission also considered two other vignettes and went on to consider the developing approaches of the National Disability Insurance Scheme to issues of child safety arising in the course of its operations.

For the Mater Dei 'vignette', evidence was given on behalf of the school by former congregational leader Sr Sonya Wagner, principal of Mater Dei in 1991 Ms Sue Dixon and current Principal and CEO, Tony Fitzgerald.

Although it also briefly considered two other cases of alleged abuse, the Royal Commission's investigation centred on the alleged sexual abuse of a Mater Dei student, a teenage girl with an intellectual disability, by a house parent in a boarding situation in 1991. The child's mother became concerned that she had suffered abuse and reported this to the relevant state authorities and the school. The school, through Ms Dixon, responded to the report and also reported to the Department of Community Services (DOCS) and the police.

Investigations were undertaken by the police and DOCS. However, the outcome of those investigations (a finding that it could not be established that the child had been abused) were not communicated to the mother, or to Mater Dei.

Later, in 1996 after the child had finished school at Mater Dei, the mother reported the case again, this time to the NSW Wood Royal Commission. A further police investigation was undertaken and at its conclusion the Sisters of the Good Samaritan, through congregational leader Sr Sonya Wagner, sought to engage the mother pastorally, to offer her assistance. Unfortunately, the mother was again not advised after making the report that an investigation had occurred, so the pastoral intention of the meeting was not achieved.

The Royal Commission also considered a case of harmful sexual behaviour (also termed 'child-on-child' abuse) which took place between two fourteen-year-old students of the school in 1992. DOCS were again involved by Mater Dei staff in the management of the case.

During the course of the Royal Commission's consideration of the 'vignette', current Principal Mr Tony Fitzgerald gave evidence as to the school's current policies and full compliance with accreditation requirements and disability service standards.

### **[Royal Commission report of Case Study No 41](#)**

#### **Report released 14 June 2017**

The Royal Commission's findings in relation to the Mater Dei 'vignette' were factual in nature.

The Royal Commission noted that child welfare authorities had been involved by parents of children or staff of the school in each incident examined in relation to Mater Dei and had investigated the alleged abuse. In one case, no record could be found in either the departmental or school records to indicate that the school was advised of the outcome of those investigations.

In relation to the female student allegedly abused by a houseparent, the Royal Commission considered that the school had protocols in place for communication between staff and parents, but could not be certain that information about policies and procedures in place for the care of her daughter were in fact communicated to the mother.

The Royal Commission accepted the evidence of Ms Dixon that her actions in responding to the alleged abuse of the female student were guided by DOCS and that, at the time, she must have considered those actions to be a reasonable way forward.

Mr Fitzgerald's evidence about the school's current compliance with accreditation requirements and disability service standards was accepted by the Royal Commission.

The Royal Commission indicated that further consideration would be given to issues around the management by institutions of children with harmful sexual behaviours and its recommendations are contained in its final report.

## Case Study No 43: Catholic Church authorities in the Maitland-Newcastle

### **Diocese of Maitland-Newcastle and the Marist Brothers**

August 2016, Newcastle NSW

In Case study 43 the Royal Commission inquired into the experience of survivors and the response of the Catholic Diocese of Maitland-Newcastle and the Marist Brothers to child sexual abuse perpetrated in the Maitland-Newcastle region by Fr Vincent Ryan and Brothers Francis Cable (Br Romuald), Darcy John O'Sullivan (Br Dominic) and Thomas Butler (Br Patrick).

The case study also considered the community impact of child sexual abuse on the Maitland-Newcastle region.

The case study did not consider matters that have been the subject of previous inquiries, including the 2012 NSW Special Commission of Inquiry concerning the investigation of certain child sexual abuse allegations in the Hunter region. The Royal Commission also took into account current criminal proceedings and investigations when determining the scope of the case study.

In relation to the Diocese of Maitland-Newcastle and abuse by Fr Vincent Ryan, the Royal Commission heard evidence from a number of survivors and parents of survivors who were abused by Vincent Ryan. Evidence was also given by two Sisters of St Joseph of Lochinvar, a teacher and Dr Peter Evans, a former priest and retired psychiatrist. Former bishop of Maitland-Newcastle Bishop Michael Malone was also called.

Bishop Bill Wright, current Bishop of Maitland-Newcastle, gave evidence about the approach of the diocese to child protection and the impact of abuse on the region. He made a statement of apology during his evidence to the Royal Commission, acknowledging the terrible and shameful history of abuse in the Diocese, the concealment of offences, lack of action by those in leadership who had knowledge of offending and, in responding, put the reputation of the Church ahead of the welfare of children in the Diocese.

In relation to the Marist Brothers and abuse by Br Romuald, Br Dominic and Br Patrick, the Royal Commission heard evidence from a number of survivors, and a mother of a survivor who had been abused while in the care of the Marist Brothers at Marist schools in the Diocese of Maitland-Newcastle. Evidence was heard of complaints made to members of the Marist Brothers about the conduct of Brothers Patrick, Dominic and Romuald. Two former provincials, Brothers Alexis Turton and Michael Hill and former principal Br Christopher Wade gave evidence as to their knowledge of and response to those complaints.

Br Peter Carroll, current Provincial of the Marist Brothers Oceania Province offered an apology to those affected by sexual and physical abuse by members of the Marist Brothers. He acknowledged the order's ignorance of the long-term effects of child sexual abuse and the failure by those in positions of authority in the Marist Brothers to take strong, decisive action against those who offended. He told the Royal Commission that the commitment of the Marist Brothers today, as it should have been in the past, is to cooperate fully with authorities, thorough, professional and effective processes and protocols to protect children and ensure their safety and compassionate responses to survivors.

### **Royal Commission report of Case Study No 43**

Report provided to government but not yet released to the public pending resolution of legal proceedings.

## Case Study No. 44: John Joseph Farrell

### **Diocese of Armidale, Diocese of Parramatta, NSW Special Issues Resources Group**

September 2016, Sydney

The Royal Commission inquired into the response of the Diocese of Armidale and the Diocese of Parramatta to allegations of child sexual abuse by former priest John Joseph Farrell, who was ordained a priest of the Diocese of Armidale but spent time in ministry in both dioceses.

The Royal Commission also heard evidence in relation to the response of the Special Issues Group, for the Province of Sydney to allegations of child sexual abuse against Farrell.

Farrell was a priest of the Diocese of Armidale. In May 2016 he was found or pleaded guilty to 62 child sexual abuse offences and sentenced to 29 years gaol, with a minimum term of 18 years.

At the time of the hearing, further charges had recently been laid against Farrell in NSW.

The Royal Commission heard evidence from survivors abused by Farrell and the mother of a survivor. It also heard from priests of the Diocese of Armidale as to their knowledge of and steps taken in response to complaints of abuse by Farrell. They were also questioned about their observations of the actions of then bishop, Bishop Harry Kennedy and Vicar General Monsignor Frank Ryan in relation to Farrell, who he ordained a deacon and subsequently a priest, apparently against the advice of the seminary and his diocesan consultors.

When allegations of child sexual abuse were made against Farrell during his time as an assistant priest at Moree, Bishop H Kennedy sent him for psychological treatment. Farrell was charged but the charges were dismissed by a magistrate in early 1988. This controversial decision led to Farrell spending some time away from Armidale, on loan to the Diocese of Parramatta.

Bishop Bede Heather, who was bishop of Parramatta when Farrell moved in 1989, gave evidence to the Royal Commission as to his knowledge of Farrell's past and the steps he took to assure himself that Farrell was suitable for ministry. His decision was based on speaking with Bishop H Kennedy and the view of Farrell's treating psychologist, that Farrell did not pose a threat to children.

Meanwhile however Farrell's case had been referred by the Diocese of Armidale to Monsignor (then Father) John Usher, a priest psychologist of the Archdiocese of Sydney. Farrell was interviewed by Fr Usher, who concluded Farrell continued to pose a significant risk to children. As a result Bishop Kevin Manning, who had replaced Bishop H Kennedy as bishop of Armidale, referred him for treatment from a psychiatrist, who confirmed Fr Usher's view.

This information was not provided to Bishop Heather. Farrell remained in ministry in Parramatta until Bishop Heather received complaints about Farrell's conduct with children in the Diocese in June 1992 and revoked his faculties. Shortly thereafter Bishop Manning did the same, removing Farrell from ministry.

Despite his removal from ministry, Farrell was not dismissed from the priesthood until 2005, when Bishop Luc Matthys made the appropriate application. In his evidence, Bishop Matthys noted the difficulty in laicising a priest without his consent prior to that time.



Both Monsignor John Usher and Father Brian Lucas gave evidence to the Royal Commission as to their involvement with the Farrell case. As establishing members of the Special Issues Resource Group for NSW, both were available to leaders of all dioceses and religious orders operating within the NSW province to provide advice, conduct and assist in investigations and manage contact with media in relation to child sexual abuse. They were asked to interview Farrell by Bishop Manning and met with him initially in September 1992, in the company of the then Vicar General for the Armidale Diocese, Father Wayne Peters (now deceased). Their recollections of this and subsequent meetings with Farrell were the subject of a Four Corners program in 2012 and also of detailed inquiry by the Royal Commission.

The Royal Commission held the case study open pending at the conclusion of Fr Usher's evidence, but subsequently advised the Council that it had closed its inquiries and would not reopen the public hearing.

#### **Royal Commission report of Case Study No 44**

Report provided to government but not yet released to the public pending resolution of legal proceedings.

## Case Study No 45: Responses to children with problematic or harmful sexual behaviours in schools

### **Society of Jesus (the Jesuits)**

October 2016, Sydney

The incidence of so-called 'child-on-child' abuse, or abuse of children by other children with harmful sexual behaviours was identified as a concerning phenomenon during the Royal Commission process. In this case study, the Royal Commission inquired into the responses of several public primary and independent private secondary schools to problematic or harmful sexual behaviour by students towards other students at those schools.

The Royal Commission considered 'vignettes' involving The King's School, Trinity Grammar, Shalom Christian College and four primary schools, the primary school vignettes being private hearings.

The Catholic entity called to participate in this case study, St Ignatius College Riverview, had a positive story to tell the Royal Commission. Riverview was involved in a limited way only in The King's School vignette, which examined the institutional responses to a survivor who suffered sexual abuse and bullying at the hands of fellow students at The King's School in 2013.

Evidence was given on behalf of St Ignatius College, Riverview by its current Principal, Dr Paul Hine about the approach of the school to the student, who transferred to Riverview after his experiences at The King's school and completed his HSC in 2015. This included spending considerable time selecting the appropriate house and mentor group for the student and putting in place day to day support strategies.

### **[Royal Commission report of Case Study No 45](#)**

#### **Report released 18 October 2017**

While the Royal Commission was critical of the response of The King's School to the abuse and bullying suffered by the student, this was in direct contrast to the positive story of the extensive support given by Riverview to the student survivor after he transferred to the school in 2014. The Royal Commission concluded in relation to Riverview that it was satisfied that the measures that Riverview implemented in 2014 and 2015 to support the student were more appropriate and successful than the measures that King's had previously taken in 2013.

The Royal Commission indicated that issues around the management by institutions of children with harmful sexual behaviours would be further considered and its findings and recommendations are contained in its final report.

## Case Study No 50: Catholic Church Final Hearing

February 2017, Sydney

In May 2016 the Royal Commission announced its intention to hold a final hearing regarding the institutional response of the Catholic Church to child sexual abuse in February 2017. In that context the Royal Commission promulgated Issues Paper No 11, detailing matters likely to be considered at the hearing. This process came to be known as 'the Catholic Wrap-up' or Catholic Church Final Hearing.

The Council had been aware for some time of the import and significance of the final hearing and had been preparing accordingly. Formal and informal discussions with the Royal Commission Chair and Royal Commission officers occurred from time to time from 2015 on. On 26 October and again on 13 December 2016, more formal meetings were held with Senior Counsel Assisting the Royal Commission to discuss the format of and program for the hearing. These discussions included the identification of possible witnesses who could give relevant evidence about particular issues in which the Royal Commission was interested. The final decision about all of those matters was made by the Royal Commission and not all suggestions or requests by the Council were accommodated.

In April 2016, July 2016 and September 2016 the Royal Commission issued statement requests to a large number of Church authorities seeking information and the production of materials in relation to the issues in which it was interested, including:

- reforms undertaken since the commencement of the Royal Commission;
- responses to case study reports affecting the authority (where applicable);
- policies and procedures for the handling of complaints of child sexual abuse and dealing with civil litigation and other applications for redress;
- matters relating to selection, screening, training and formation of clergy and religious and support for and supervision of working clergy and religious; and
- reports to 'international Catholic Church bodies'.

The Royal Commission also requested statements regarding the operation of the Catholic education system, its governance structures and child protection policies.

Although not all Church authorities received statement requests, the requests issued covered the whole of Australia. Sixty statements were prepared for the final hearing by or on behalf of the Church authorities in response to the Royal Commission's requests.

See [Appendix 11](#) - Case Study 50: sample requests showing the range of issues covered which shows the range of issues covered.

See [Appendix 12](#) - Case Study 50: Church authorities and seminary rectors who provided statements in response to the Royal Commission's inquiries for final Catholic Church hearing, which contains a list of the Church authorities and rectors who provided statements and (or) materials in response to the notices.

The Council estimates that more than 7,500 pages of material were supplied by Church authorities to the Royal Commission in this process.

It seems clear from the tenor of the questions during the public hearing for Case Study 50 that these statements were considered by the Royal Commission and played a part in directing the proceedings. However, because of the sheer bulk of the materials, there was much that was not addressed in the hearing. Some of this other material has since been dealt with by the Royal Commission in its final report.

The Council also commissioned and submitted a [major research paper on relevant aspects of canon law](#) for the purposes of the final hearing, from eminent canonist Dr Rodger Austin. It also prepared and lodged a comprehensive written submission in December 2016 entitled [The Catholic Church: Then and Now](#). The submission is summarised

#### Issues Paper No 11: Catholic Church Final Hearing.

During January 2017, the Council and its legal representatives assisted more than sixty Church witnesses as they prepared to give evidence during the hearing.

Case Study 50, the Catholic Church Final Hearing occurred over 15 sitting days from 6 to 24 February 2017. It commenced with the release by the Royal Commission of the statistical results of the Catholic Church Data Project (discussed [Data](#) on the extent of child sexual abuse within the Church) and then moved to an analysis of factors that may have caused or contributed to the occurrence of child sexual abuse in Catholic institutions or affected the institutional response to this abuse over time, including:

- clericalism and other cultural attitudes;
- mandatory celibacy;
- inadequacies in screening of candidates and seminary and religious formation;
- the lack of ongoing support and professional supervision of priests and religious;
- governance and structural issues within the Church;
- secrecy and perceived canonical responsibilities and impediments to the proper handling of complaints; and
- the sacrament of reconciliation.

The Royal Commission also examined current child safety, complaint handling and risk management practices operating in Church authorities, the Catholic education system and Catholic social services nationally.

The Royal Commission heard evidence from members of the Pontifical Commission for the Protection of Minors about their work.

Evidence was given about the formation of, and role to be played by, Catholic Professional Standards Ltd going forward.

In the final week of the hearing the Royal Commission heard evidence from panels of archbishops, bishops and leaders of religious institutes about a broad range of past, present and future issues relevant to the institutional child sexual abuse crisis and the future of the Church in relevant areas.

See [Appendix 13](#) - Case Study 50 Summaries of panel contributions, which contains a list of panel participants who gave evidence at various sessions during Case Study 50, the Catholic Church Final Hearing and the major issues raised during those sessions.

The Royal Commission did not issue a separate report concerning Case Study 50 and there was no submission process following the conclusion of the hearing. Rather, the relevant findings and recommendations stemming from the hearing have been included in the Royal Commission's final report.

---

## Royal Commission research

By the end of December 2017 the Royal Commission had finalised and published reports relating to 62 research projects across a range of issues which enabled it to draw on the learning of national and international experts across many disciplines. A number of reports have not been released.

During the period of its operation the Royal Commission also released a total of eleven issues papers for public response on topics including working with children checks, child safe organisations, *Towards Healing*, out-of-home care, civil litigation, redress schemes and statutory survivors of crime compensation schemes, for public response.

It received hundreds of submissions from organisations and individuals to this issues paper program, and this input ultimately informed the Royal Commission's recommendations and final report.

The Church, through the Council, was among only a hand full of institutions which provided submissions to all eleven issues papers.

As noted in the following discussion, the Council's submissions were informed by hundreds of people associated with different Catholic organisations across Australia. Without their significant contribution to this process the Council would not have been able to lodge submissions in response to all issues papers.

See [Appendix 14](#) - Council submissions to Royal Commission Issues paper for links to all Council submissions to Royal Commission issues papers.

## Council submissions to issues papers

### Issues Paper No 1: Working With Children Check

In June 2013 the Royal Commission called for submissions to [Issues Paper 1 - Working with Children Check](#) (WWCC). All states and territories have systems which, in general terms, provide some level of pre-employment screening for adults working with children. In most states, individuals need to apply for a WWCC which might include a police check, criminal history check, relevant employment proceedings, and findings from professional disciplinary bodies.

#### Council response

The key recommendation from the Council's WWCC submission was that governments around Australia should take a national approach to screening, overseen by a regulatory body which would:

- provide greater transparency and consistency across jurisdictions;
- help close loopholes that currently pose a threat to the safety of children;
- enable the sharing of intelligence across jurisdictions;
- ensure continuous monitoring of relevant records across jurisdictions;
- provide greater 'portability' for workers, enabling them to travel from state-to-state; and
- limit the burdensome red tape that currently exists for workers travelling across states and territories.

#### Consultation

In the preparation of the submission the Council consulted with a range of stakeholders, including:

- dioceses and religious orders;
- Catholic education, schools and parent bodies;
- Catholic social services;
- Catholic employment relations; and
- Professional standards offices.

A copy of the Council's response to *Issues Paper No 1: Working with Children Check* is available [here](#).

#### Royal Commission Report: Working with Children Checks

The Royal Commission issued a [report on Working with Children Checks](#) in August 2015.

## Issues Paper No 2: Towards Healing

In July 2013 the Royal Commission released [\*Issues Paper 2: Towards Healing\*](#).

*Towards Healing -Principles and Procedures in Responding to Complaints of Sexual Abuse against Personnel of the Catholic Church in Australia (Towards Healing)* was adopted by the ACBC and CRA in 1996. It is used by all Catholic dioceses and religious orders in Australia apart from the Melbourne Archdiocese, which has adopted *The Melbourne Response*, to respond to survivors of child sexual abuse within Church institutions. *Towards Healing* was revised in 2000, 2003, 2010 and 2016. The 2003 and 2010 revisions followed internal reviews.

The Royal Commission said it was particularly interested in:

- the experience of survivors who have engaged in the *Towards Healing* process;
- the principles and procedures of *Towards Healing* as instructions for Church authorities dealing with complaints and redress regarding survivors of child sexual abuse; and
- the principles and procedures of *Towards Healing* relating to the accused and particularly the responses and outcomes available.

### Council response

In the Council's submission to the Royal Commission it was recommended that:

- an independent compensation commissioner be appointed to determine payments within *Towards Healing*, which would separate the pastoral responses in *Towards Healing* from the determination of financial payments;
- lay and independent experts be appointed to strengthen the Church's NCPS;
- an independent national board be introduced to develop and administer national child protection standards;
- the board would monitor adherence to these standards and publicly report on compliance;
- the board would also provide more rigorous assessment, monitoring, auditing and enforcement of *Towards Healing* practices; and
- greater transparency be introduced through public reporting by both the new national board and the *Towards Healing* process.

### Consultation

- In the preparation of the submission, the Council consulted with a range of stakeholders, including:
- all religious orders and their affiliated services through CRA;
- all dioceses and archdioceses and their affiliated services through the ACBC; and
- professional standards offices.

A copy of the Council's response to *Issues Paper No 2: Towards Healing* is available [here](#).



## Issues Paper No 3: Child Safe Institutions

In August 2013 the Royal Commission released [\*Issues Paper 3: Child Safe Institutions\*](#) and called for submissions on how child safe policies and practices could be implemented or developed to reduce potential risks and keep children safer in institutions. It described examples of child safe policies and practices including codes of conduct, complaints handling procedures, and the recruitment, education, training and supervision of staff, including volunteers.

### Council response

Recommendations from the Council's submission included:

- a national mandatory accreditation and data collection system for all institutions working with children;
- a national mandatory accreditation scheme overseen by a national body with responsibility for auditing organisations against child safe standards and practices;
- a protective, child-centred, organisational culture;
- governance and leadership informed by an understanding of the developmental needs of children;
- a risk management process that identifies and develops responses to high risk issues;
- implementation of a child protection policy;
- human resource practices that promote the recruitment of suitable people to work with children, invest in their development, and monitor their performance;
- effective investigation processes and external monitoring; and
- empowerment of children and victim support programs.

### Consultation

In the preparation of the submission, the Council consulted with a range of stakeholders, including:

- Catholic social services;
- Catholic education;
- Catholic employment relations;
- professional standards offices; and
- bishops and leaders of religious orders.

A copy of the Council's response to *Issues Paper No 3: Child Safe Institutions* is available [here](#).

## Issues Paper No 4: Preventing Sexual Abuse of Children in Out-of-Home Care

In September 2013 the Royal Commission released [\*Issues Paper 4: Preventing sexual abuse of children in Out-of-Home Care \(OOHC\)\*](#). All states and territories have a system where children can be cared for outside of their family home. This is generally as a result of Children's Court orders where responsibility for the child is transferred to the state. Sometimes parents voluntarily arrange for OOHC. OOHC can include foster care, relative or kinship care, family group homes, residential care and independent living arrangements.

### Council response

In its submission the Council noted there is a need for:

- development of a best practice approach to the implementation of the National Standards for Out-of-Home Care which monitors performance and ensures the appropriate qualification of carers and a safe environment for children;
- consideration of the individual needs of children in out-of-home care;
- engagement in active planning for safe care within OOHC systems;
- implementation of rigorous independent monitoring and oversight of investigations into abuse allegations as they arise; and
- regulation and monitoring by governments and independent agencies.

To that end the Council recommended that a best practice approach to the prevention of sexual abuse in OOHC should feature the following:

- ensuring all providers are child safe organisations;
- placement-matching based on purpose of care and the assessed behavioural support needs of the child;
- a 'continuum of care' approach to OOHC service provision (whereby a range of placement types across both foster care and residential care are able to be provided for a child as his/her care needs change over time);
- recognition of particular needs in relation to specific groups of children (for example Aboriginal and Torres Strait Islander children, children from culturally and linguistically diverse backgrounds, and children in kinship care);
- case management and decision making for OOHC plans which occurs as closely as possible to the child;
- regular reviews of child-related plans, with the full participation of the child;
- strong, independent regulatory, accreditation and licensing systems for OOHC providers;
- rigorous recruitment, assessment and initial and ongoing training of prospective and current paid and volunteer OOHC carers, in addition to working with children checks;

- realistic worker caseloads which allow for regular frequent visits to children in care, and the development of a trusting worker-child relationship;
- clear reporting requirements and independent oversight of investigations into allegations of all forms of abuse (including sexual abuse) of children in OOHC;
- comprehensive processes for the selection of appropriately qualified, skilled and experienced staff;
- induction arrangements for new staff;
- regular training of caseworkers and carers in policies and procedures and arrangements to ensure these are understood by staff;
- supervision of case workers and carers; and
- regular review of policies and updating and training of staff on changes to policies, processes and practices.

### Consultation

In the preparation of the submission, the Council consulted with a range of stakeholders, including:

- dioceses and religious orders;
- Catholic social services;
- Catholic education;
- Catholic health;
- professional standards offices; and
- Catholic employment relations.

A copy of the Council's response to *Issues Paper No 4: Preventing Sexual Abuse of Children in Out-of-Home Care* is available [here](#).

## Issues Paper No 5: Civil Litigation

In December 2013 the Royal Commission released [\*Issues Paper 5: Civil Litigation\*](#). It called for submissions on how effective civil litigation systems throughout Australia are in resolving claims for damages for child sexual abuse. Across Australia there are broadly similar civil litigation systems which allow a person who claims to have been wrongfully harmed to seek damages from the individual or institution. The Royal Commission asked for submissions on possible reforms to improve the effectiveness of the civil litigation systems particularly in claims of child sexual abuse.

### Council response

In its submission the Council recognised and endorsed the need for law reform around a number of issues related to access to justice and in particular, obstacles that exist for survivors of abuse who may seek to bring civil claims against the Church.

*Entity to sue:* The submission recognised that the Church in Australia is not a discrete legal entity and it can sometimes be difficult for a survivor to identify a responsible party against which to bring proceedings.

In its submission, the Council suggested legislation should be introduced imposing a requirement on all unincorporated associations which appoint or supervise people working with children to establish an incorporated entity able to be sued on behalf of the institution. The legislation would require the institution to ensure the entity is sufficiently insured or indemnified from the assets of the institution to meet any civil claims that may be made against it relating to the abuse of a child.

*Limitation periods:* In relation to the issue of statutes of limitation operating in many circumstances to bar civil child sexual abuse claims, by the time the Council came to make its submission some state governments had announced an intention to abolish the limitation period in child sexual abuse cases. Against that background, the Council submitted that governments in Australia establish limitation periods of 25 years running from the age on which the victim reached his or her majority, with the victim being entitled to apply to have the period extended but with a power to the court to order a permanent stay of proceedings if the delay meant that a fair trial was not possible.

*Vicarious liability:* Another significant public policy issue is the liability Church leaders have when a priest or a member of a religious congregation abuses a child. To date the general position within the Church has been that the current law in Australia relating to vicarious liability should be a matter for the courts. That law holds that the abuse of a child by a priest or religious is a criminal act for which the perpetrator is responsible and that, absent of any dereliction of duty or negligence by the perpetrator's bishop or congregational leader, the Church organisation concerned is not legally liable. This is also the position in relation to liability for abuse perpetrated by individuals working in government and other institutions. Although the law in Canada and the United Kingdom in this area has been changing, this position was recently upheld by the High Court of Australia.

While the Council made no recommendation on this matter in its submission, in its round table discussions, the Royal Commission considered whether the law should be reformed to impose a new duty on institutions which work with children and subsequently made recommendations in its Redress and Civil Litigation report.

*Civil litigation as an avenue for redress:* In relation to the suitability of civil litigation as an avenue of redress, the Council submitted that, while civil litigation must always be an option for survivors of abuse, it is inevitably difficult, time consuming, expensive and uncertain and is often not the best way for survivors to achieve healing.

It was, and remains the view of the Council that a national, independent redress scheme, funded by institutions responsible for the abuse, will provide a faster, fairer and more compassionate way for survivors to achieve justice.

### Consultation

In the preparation of the submission, the Council consulted with a range of stakeholders, including:

- members of CRA and their delegates; and
- members of the ACBC and their delegates.

A copy of the Council's response to *Issues Paper No 5: Civil Litigation* is available [here](#).

## Issues Paper No 6: Redress Schemes

In April 2014 the Royal Commission released [\*Issues Paper 6: Redress schemes\*](#). The Royal Commission looked into what institutions and governments should do to address, or alleviate the impact of past and future child sexual abuse in institutional contexts, including in ensuring justice for survivors through the provision of redress by institutions.

'Redress' means remedy or compensation, and it can include financial compensation, provision of services, recognition and apologies and the like. The Royal Commission was considering the effectiveness of redress schemes or processes established by governments or institutions to offer compensation and/or services to those who suffer child sexual abuse in institutional contexts.

### Council response

In its submission the Council proposed a national redress scheme, run by an independent body but funded by institutions against which claims of abuse had been upheld. Under the scheme proposed by the Council:

- there should be no time limit for bringing a claim;
- financial redress should take into account past out-of-pocket medical expenses, non-economic loss (eg pain and suffering) and the cost of counselling services;
- financial redress should be capped with the cap determined in line with community standards
- the cap should be indexed;
- any claimant, having rejected a redress offer made through the scheme, should have the option of instigating civil proceedings;
- the ongoing administration of the scheme should be funded by the institutions against which claims are upheld;
- a levy on public liability insurance for institutions that have contact with children should be established to cover payments on behalf of institutions that no longer exist; and
- limited free legal advice should be available – alternatively, claimants should be able to retain lawyers, with costs calculated on a prescribed fee scale.

The approach recommended by the Council would spread the load and would sharply focus the attention of all institutions that care for children on the need for rigorous child protection policies and practices.

In a speech in October 2014 Justice McClellan outlined what the Royal Commission considers to be the three key elements of a redress scheme, designed to ensure justice for abuse survivors including:

- an opportunity to receive a meaningful apology;
- counselling or psychiatric care for as long as needed; and
- a lump sum payment.

These aspects were subsequently recommended by the Royal Commission as the key elements of a national redress scheme for survivors of institutional child sexual abuse. The Council fully supports this approach, which is consistent with the redress scheme outlined in its submission to the Royal Commission.

Significantly, the Council's submission also made a recommendation which goes to one of the major problems Justice McClellan identified in his speech: where do victims go to get justice when the institution responsible for their abuse no longer exists?

As part of the Council's redress scheme proposal a small levy on insurance coverage for all institutions that currently have responsibility for children could build, fairly quickly, a fund that could provide support for people abused in institutions that have closed, leaving no one and no assets to cover redress payments. This recommendation was not taken up by the Royal Commission in its report, and funder of last resort provisions remain an issue for resolution in current discussions around the establishment of a national redress scheme.

Pastoral care for survivors of child sexual abuse within the Church has always been an integral part of the Church's two current redress schemes, *Towards Healing* and *The Melbourne Response*. The Council's submission recommends that pastoral care should continue to be offered by institutions, alongside payment of redress under the scheme. At a minimum, pastoral care offerings should include:

- the opportunity for a survivor to receive a meaningful apology from the senior leader of the Diocese or Religious Order in which the abuse occurred;
- the opportunity, if requested and possible, to confront the person responsible for the abuse directly;
- an individually developed pastoral care package designed with the direct input of the survivor; and
- an explanation as to the steps taken by the institution to protect against the occurrence of further abuse.

### Consultation

In the preparation of the submission, the Council consulted with a range of stakeholders, including:

- the ACBC;
- CRA; and
- representatives from Catholic education, social services, employment relations, and professional standards.

A copy of the Council's response to *Issues Paper No 6: Redress Schemes* is available [here](#).

### Royal Commission Report: Redress and Civil Litigation

The Royal Commission delivered a [Report on Redress and Civil Litigation](#) in September 2015.

## Issues Paper No 7: Statutory Victims of Crime Compensation Schemes

In May 2014 the Royal Commission released [\*Issues Paper 7: Statutory victims of crime compensation schemes\*](#) (SVOCC schemes) looking at the effectiveness of VOCC schemes for those who experience child sexual abuse while in the care of an institution. The paper forms part of a series of projects in relation to the scope of justice for victims.

All states and territories have schemes that allow victims of crime to apply for compensation, counselling and other services from a dedicated pool of funds. SVOCC schemes can differ greatly between states and territories, such as time frames for victims to apply for compensation, the payments and services that victims receive and the level of supportive evidence victims require to apply for compensation. The Royal Commission was required under its terms of reference to consider the role of compensation in addressing and alleviating the impact of child sexual abuse.

### Council response

The Council said adult survivors of child sexual abuse would be better off under a national redress scheme than existing arrangements for redress through state-based SVOCC schemes.

The Council's submission outlined disadvantages of SVOCC schemes but said there may still be a limited role for a SVOCC scheme, however the following aspects would need to be considered:

- consistency, or harmonisation, in order to ensure similar outcomes for victims of child sexual abuse nationally;
- the establishment of simplified and accessible application processes that are flexible and accommodate the special needs of applicants, including making interpreters available and having staff who are cross-culturally trained and trained to cater for special needs;
- preparation of information about the SVOCC process which is made readily available in easily understandable formats;
- compliance with principles of natural justice;
- consistent standards of proof;
- timeliness in decision making, including the establishment of clear response times and communication of those response times;
- amounts of financial compensation that reflect the long-term impact of child sexual abuse, with caps on that compensation determined by reference to community standards;
- power to order that financial awards be paid by the institution responsible for the child sexual abuse;
- capacity for awards to include non-monetary redress such as an apology;
- the provision of ongoing counselling and medical services;
- no limitation periods;
- any scheme for victims should be independent, generous and designed and developed in consultation with victims; and



- it should represent best practice in terms of process and outcomes for victims of child sexual abuse.

### Consultation

In the preparation of the submission, the Council consulted with a range of stakeholders, including:

- members of the ACBC and their delegates;
- members of CRA and their delegates; and
- representatives from Catholic social services and professional standards.

A copy of Council's response to *Issues Paper No 7: Statutory Victims of Crime Compensation Schemes* is available [here](#).

## Issues Paper No 8: Experiences of police and prosecution responses

In May 2015 the Royal Commission released [\*Issues Paper 8: Police and prosecution responses\*](#). The Royal Commission was considering many aspects of the criminal justice system through its Criminal Justice Project. These included issues relating to reporting to police, police investigations and responses, and prosecution processes and outcomes. While there are some differences between the criminal justice systems, there are also broad similarities throughout Australia.

The Royal Commission sought submissions on people's experiences of reporting institutional child sexual abuse to police; how police responded to the report; the police investigation process; interacting with prosecutors, if charges were laid; preparation for court; and the trial and any sentencing or appeal processes. Submissions were sought from people with personal and professional experiences in this area.

### Council Response

Input received by the Council indicated that the vast majority of interactions between police and Church officials were positive, with the police responding professionally to reports of alleged child sexual abuse and with relationships being respectful and productive. Over more recent years, the police have become more active in prosecuting historic cases of child sexual abuse. But there may be scope for improvement in relation to police responses in the following areas:

- In NSW different Local Area Commands (LACs) can have different views on whether historic cases of child sexual abuse should be reported to the LAC in which the victim lives or the LAC in which the abuse occurred. Some LACs can also be very slow in conducting investigations.
- Some police investigations can be drawn out, resulting in anguish for victims and their families and for persons under investigation. For many victims, the historic reality is that disclosing to authority achieves nothing. Consequently, the importance of reliable, consistent communication from the investigating officer may be significantly greater for victims of child sexual abuse than for many other victims of crime.
- Drawn out investigations can be costly for the employing institution which has had to stand a person under investigation aside. More streamlined police processes would assist in reducing the cost burden and the personal anguish for individuals involved and their families.
- If and when the police issue public media releases in relation to investigations are matters for the police. In issuing media releases, however, it is important that the police give consideration to the matter of prior consultation with the Diocese, school or other institution which may be affected. Appropriate consultation will enable the institution to have in place any necessary support for abuse survivors and their community before the media release issues.

The existence of a legislative obligation in NSW to report certain kinds of criminal conduct to the police has led to different practices amongst Church entities in relation to the reporting of historic child sexual abuse allegations. In NSW, the view taken in the report of the Police Integrity Commission about the effect of section 316 of the *Crimes Act 1900* (NSW) led to the NSW/ACT Professional Standards Office abandoning its practice of 'blind' reporting.

In response to the report of the Victorian Parliamentary Inquiry into the Handling of Child Abuse by Religious and Other Non-Government Organisations, the *Crimes Act 1958* (Vic) was amended in 2014. Section 327 of that Act makes it an offence for an adult (whether in Victoria or elsewhere) who has

information leading him or her to form a reasonable belief that a sexual offence has been committed in Victoria by an adult against a child to fail to disclose the information to a member of the Victoria Police.

The offence is subject to a number of exceptions, including:

- where the information is given by the victim of the alleged abuse and that person is over 16 at the time of providing the information, is not suffering from an intellectual disability and requests that the information not be disclosed; and
- where the information comes solely through the public domain.

While the provision does not prevent a person reporting to the police information from a person over 16 about a child sexual abuse offence allegedly perpetrated against the person, it respects the position of a victim who does not want details of the offending disclosed and is sufficiently mature to make that judgment. However, the Council has concerns whether the provision is adequate. The fact that an obligation to report child sexual abuse does not apply in circumstances where the victim is now mature and requests that the information not be disclosed means that the section does not fully meet the interests of child safety in a case where the alleged perpetrator may still be alive and may pose a threat to children.

The Council is of the view that there should be a nationally consistent criminal law provision in Australia requiring a person who has information leading the person to form a reasonable belief that a sexual offence has been committed against a child to disclose that information to the police unless the person has a reasonable excuse for not doing so. The Council considers that nationally consistent legislation relating to reporting to the police would enhance a nationally consistent, trauma-informed approach to survivors of child sexual abuse.

In relation to prosecution matters, the Council considers that there are elements of court practice that have made a survivor's experience of the trial process less daunting than it might have been in the past. Those elements include the predominance of closed courts, the use of non-publication orders and the use of CCTV rooms from which survivors are able to give evidence. However, trial processes will inevitably be challenging for many survivors. It is particularly important, therefore, that prosecuting authorities provide survivors with timely, accurate and consistent updates in relation to the trial process. Witness assistance services within offices of Directors of Public Prosecutions also need to be properly resourced to ensure constant and full communication with witnesses, including communications to explain court delays and adjournments, what will be involved in sentencing hearings and assistance for witnesses who are asked to give evidence in locations away from their home base.

## Consultation

In preparing the submission, the Council invited views from the bodies it represents. The comments and views expressed draw on the experience of those who responded to the Council's invitation. Some responses drew attention to matters relating to the experience of particular Church entities with police and prosecution processes that may or may not be the experience of other Church entities.

A copy of the Council's response to *Issues Paper No 8: Experiences of Police and Prosecution Responses* is available [here](#).

## Issues Paper No 9: Addressing the risk of child sexual abuse in primary and secondary schools

The Royal Commission released [\*Issues Paper 9: The risk of sexual abuse in schools\*](#) in July 2015, noting that around 30 per cent of the individuals who had spoken to the Royal Commission to that date were sexually abused as children in a school environment, with non-government schools in particular accounting for a disproportionately high number of reports.

The Royal Commission sought specific feedback on governance and leadership; protection and support services for children and specific student populations; registration of non-government schools and not-for-profit corporate agencies; education, training, professional support and primary prevention; reporting, information sharing, complaints and investigations.

### Council Response

The Council's submission made the following recommendations:

To ensure child protection compliance requirements are child-focused, clear and able to be fulfilled, legislation for schools should be harmonised. Mandatory reporting laws would also be better refined for school environments by harmonisation. Harmonisation and the resulting consistency would significantly enhance the ability of schools and school systems to give effect to these requirements at a practical level.

As recently recommended by the Royal Commission, a national Working with Children Check should be implemented as a priority.

Legislative change should also be made to school registration and teacher accreditation in primary and secondary schools to harmonise requirements and ensure an emphasis in these processes on child safety.

National standards through the National Safe Schools Framework should be uniformly adopted. Compliance could be monitored by means of the Australian Government Compliance Annual Certificate requirements.

Compliance structures need to be based on a nationally-consistent message to all communities in Australia about the role of schools in responding to child protection concerns and standardisation of child protection training across all schools.

There is a need for consistency in legislation for government and non-government schools. All schools should be subject to the same stringent requirements for policies and procedures to keep students safe and to act protectively (including reporting to appropriate authorities) when a child is harmed or at risk of harm.

Consideration should be given to establishing national protocols to define more clearly how schools and police are to work together during investigation processes especially where the investigation relates to an allegation of abuse within the school.

Adoption of the National Boarding Standards may result in greater consistency in the operation of boarding facilities, although little comment can be made at this early stage as to whether these standards alone would provide for stronger protection against child sexual abuse.

There is a need to develop a mechanism to identify reliably from both a system and a school perspective what constitutes a safe school.

The capacity for sharing of critical information by relevant agencies should be further developed.

### Consultation

In preparing its response the Council consulted with the National Catholic Education Commission and the Catholic education offices and commissions in each state and through them with Catholic systemic schools. The Council also consulted with Catholic non-systemic schools through the relevant body.

A copy of the Council's submission to *Issues Paper No 9: Addressing the risk of child sexual abuse in schools* is available [here](#).

## Issues Paper No 10: Advocacy and Therapeutic Treatment Services

The Royal Commission called for submissions in response to [\*Issues Paper 10: Advocacy and Therapeutic Treatment Services\*](#) in October 2015. During its consultation on redress and civil litigation, it became clear to the Royal Commission that victims and survivors have a range of needs beyond being able to access counselling and psychological care as part of a redress scheme. The Royal Commission noted in its Redress Report that a separate project would investigate the adequacy of advocacy and support services. The Royal Commission noted that while it is plain there is a need for more and longer-term support for victims and survivors, it is not yet clear how best to strengthen services.

In this issues paper, the Royal Commission sought to better understand the issues and options for improvement. Questions focused on victim and survivor needs and unmet needs; diverse victims and survivors; geographic considerations; service system issues; and evidence and promising practices.

### Council Response

The Council submitted that a clear definition of abuse is essential, including the spectrum of behaviours that are sexually abusive.

The submission touched on the unique themes in disclosure for male and female survivors. It also looked at the complexities surrounding disclosure including the impact of negative reactions.

It was submitted that:

- There should be consistent and informed knowledge about the issue of power and its dynamics in child sexual abuse.
- Power needs to be understood as central to child sexual abuse. The guiding principle of recovery is to restore power and control to the survivor.
- The concept of recovery is central to treatment of child sexual abuse. Practitioners must focus on the impact of social determinants of health, as well as on symptoms, and consider environmental, economic, social and political factors and how they influence a survivor's experience of abuse.
- Victims and survivors should get access to high quality sophisticated services that are readily accessible. These services must be sensitive to and be able to integrate biological, psychological and sociological factors in each survivor's situation as traumatic experiences rarely exist in isolation.
- To focus purely on child sexual abuse and not understand the influence of child sexual abuse in perpetuating or precipitating other existing psychological disorders is to deny survivors integrated care.

The Council submitted that effective campaigns are needed to counter perceptions which:

- blame victims;
- diminish the responsibility of perpetrators;
- perpetuate re-victimisation;
- suggest children are most often abused by strangers (the majority are abused by someone they know);

- suggest that perpetrators are predominantly paedophiles (which suggests child sexual abuse is a form of sexual deviance which it is, but it is primarily an abuse of power); and
- focus attention on a 'kind of person' rather than kinds of behaviour, such as entrapment, grooming and control of children and the production and consumption of child pornography.

Public campaigns should be comprehensive and be developed in consultation with survivors; invite the community, but particularly men to take a stance against abuse; and raise the profile of the complex and varied experiences of abuse of survivors.

The submission noted that many people do not present to support services with sexual abuse as the lead or even stated issue. Instead they present for a range of reasons such as family breakdown, homelessness, addiction or mental health problems.

Treatment and support should also be available to families and other secondary victims and should be sensitive to the impact of abuse on spirituality, gender and cultural differences.

Challenges to providing support outside metropolitan areas include distance and isolation, limited reliable communication and other technologies, lack of access to crisis care, and financial hardship.

The Council supported a nationally consistent approach to clinical supervision, training and professional development provided by accredited professional bodies.

A therapeutic case management model with experienced clinical practitioners (preferably social workers) who are not providing the therapy but assessing need and providing support will help ensure victims and survivors receive the coordinated services and care they need. Therapists must be adequately trained, including in trauma-informed practice.

### Consultation

In preparing this paper the Council sought feedback from the NCPS, state professional standards offices and professional standards offices in dioceses and religious orders.

A copy of the Council's response to *Issues Paper No 10: Advocacy and Support and Therapeutic Treatment Services* is available [here](#).

## Issues Paper No 11: Catholic Church Final Hearing

As discussed [Case Study No 50:](#), in May 2016 the Royal Commission publicly announced its intention to hold the Catholic Church Final Hearing, which became Case Study 50. On 5 May 2016 the Royal Commission released [Issues Paper 11: Catholic Church Final Hearing](#), calling for submissions on matters likely to be considered at the hearing.

The scope and purpose of the hearing, as detailed in Issues Paper 11, was to inquire into the current policies and procedures of Church authorities in Australia in relation to child protection and child-safe standards, including responding to allegations of child sexual abuse; factors that may have contributed to the occurrence of child sexual abuse at Church institutions; factors that may have affected the institutional response of Church authorities to child sexual abuse; the response of Church authorities to relevant case study reports and other Royal Commission reports; and data relating to the extent of claims of child sexual abuse in the Church in Australia.

Fifty individuals or institutions responded to the call to lodge submissions and these submissions can be found on the Royal Commission's website.

The Council chose not to lodge a submission in response to Issues Paper No 11. However, in the context of the Catholic Church Final Hearing, on 16 December 2016 the Council lodged a detailed written submission entitled *The Catholic Church: Then and Now*, which effectively covered the issues it raised.

### A summary of the Council's submission to Case Study 50

[The Catholic Church: Then and Now](#) is of necessity general in nature and should be read in conjunction with the evidentiary material for Case Study 50, available on the Royal Commission's website.

The submission describes in some detail the structure of the Catholic Church noting that the Church is *sui generis*; difficult to grasp because of its size, the different communities it comprises at local, state, national and international levels, the range of its activities and works, and the unprecedented history and geography of its extent.

*Church structure:* As a collection of Particular Churches, the Church is not analogous to a large corporation with many departments. More accurately it is a community of different levels of authority and overlapping authorities. Put simply, although ultimate authority rests with God, organisational authority resides with the Pope. Bishops take an oath of allegiance to the Pope and priests are obliged to obey the dictates of their bishops. At the local level, parish priests have authority within their parish and canon law then prescribes the processes and procedures to follow in administration at both diocesan and parish levels. As a sociological reality, the clerical class has a different status, power and influence than the lay class within the operational and daily life of the Church. This is similar to the institutional status afforded members of the medical and legal professions due to their special knowledge and roles within society.

*Vocations:* Over time in Australia there has been a declining trend in the vocations to the priesthood and religious life. Consequently, more lay people have been engaged in administrative and ministry levels of the life of the Church and have assumed responsibilities, and asserted influence, in ways not experienced in past decades. However, this has not altered the structures and effective lines of authority of the Church. It remains innately hierarchical.

*Causal factors:* In the submission the Council discussed factors that may have contributed to the child sex abuse crisis, submitting that in the past there was concealment of facts, movement of perpetrators and a failure to report cases to the police. Some past Church leaders sought to protect the reputation of the



Church over the safety and welfare of children. The Council also submitted that inadequate training and formation of priests and religious to prepare and support them to live celibate lives (rather than celibacy per se) may have been a factor which contributed to the child sexual abuse crisis. It said that clericalism may have been a factor which both contributed to the crisis and affected the response of Church leaders and that the response of Church leaders was also affected by ignorance about the nature of paedophilia and by a failure to listen to survivors and give priority to responding pastorally to them.

It said a naivety on the part of many bishops and leaders led them to misconstrue the abuse as a moral failure on the part of the offender and not a crime. This in turn led them to manage the cases on an internal, pastoral basis and not as a matter for civil authorities.

*Responding to survivors:* Commenting on the history and development of Church responses to child sexual abuse, the Council said that the instigation of *Towards Healing* and *The Melbourne Response* were major shifts in the approach the Church took to managing child sexual abuse cases. These protocols were at the forefront of international efforts in the Catholic Church at the time. They also provided a much-needed redress pathway for victims, particularly those who did not wish to pursue a legal response. The schemes have worked well for many and less so for others.

*Current approaches:* The submission summarised initiatives in many dioceses and religious orders to ensure the safety of children, concluding that the Church has made significant progress in establishing regimes and protocols to fulfil its obligation to create a safe environment for children and vulnerable people, but acknowledging there is more to be done.

*Formation and training:* The submission outlined improved training and formation measures, in summary submitting that seminary formation has changed significantly since the 1980's in Australia with the introduction of better screening and psychological testing procedures. It said that although human development programs are now a compulsory feature of seminary training there is a need for consistency and quality control of their applications and that standards of educational outcomes should be developed for all seminaries that operate in Australia. It also said standards need to be established that direct the level of on-going formation clergy and religious are provided throughout the course of their active service life.

*Canon law:* The submission provided insight into the interface between canon and civil law, stressing, among a number of issues that there were no Church laws or other legal requirements that either prohibited or encumbered bishops from complying with civil laws in regard to reporting priest offenders of child sexual abuse to civil authorities.

*Confession:* On the issue of the participation of children in the sacrament of reconciliation the Council submitted that a religious confession should remain a privileged communication under the law in Australia. The Church leaders, indeed all in positions of responsibility in Church authorities, are acutely aware of their obligations to be vigilant in the protection of children and vulnerable people in all areas of the life and work of the Church, including the provision of opportunities for children to engage in the Sacrament of Reconciliation.

*Dealing with perpetrators:* The Council concluded that after looking at a snapshot of policies for dealing with convicted perpetrators across dioceses and religious orders, the approach of Church authorities to the management of perpetrators ranges from on-going internal supervision to expulsion. The Council considers that ensuring the safety of children and the welfare of the community should be the guiding determinant of the approach taken and that consideration should be given to the development of a structured standard for how the future of a perpetrator is determined by Church authorities.

*Claims and review of past settlements:* Chapter 9 mentions the particular steps the Church has taken to date to assist those who wish to pursue claims against Church institutions or those whose claims have been subject to past settlements, whether the claims were brought under the Church's pastoral response programs or at law.

The Council acknowledges that the structure of the Church often involves difficulties for potential litigants over and above the general difficulties for litigants in this area that were described in the Council's submission on the Royal Commission's *Issues Paper No 2*. One of the difficulties can be identification of the correct defendant against which to bring proceedings. The submission summarises the Council's guidelines for responding to requests to review settlements and its guidelines for responding to civil claims for child sexual abuse.

*CPS Limited:* The Council concludes that now that Catholic Professional Standards Ltd has been established, compliance with the national professional standards it develops will improve risk management for child safety and safeguarding across the Church and that the publication of audit reports will enhance transparency and accountability of Church authorities in the provision of child safe environments.

### Consultation

In preparing its submission the Council consulted widely with the authorising bodies it represents, including Church authorities and the services they oversee.

A copy of the Council's submission *The Catholic Church: Then and Now* is available [here](#).

## Consultation Papers

In addition to the issues paper process the Royal Commission also sought submissions from the community and interested organisations to six consultation papers it released between March 2015 and March 2017.

Again, with the assistance of the broader Catholic community the Council made submissions to all these papers.

See [Appendix 15](#) - Council Consultation paper submissions for a list of all Council submissions to Royal Commission consultation papers.

## Redress and civil litigation

The Royal Commission released [Redress and civil litigation: Consultation paper](#) on 30 January 2015. The following is a summary of the Council's response.

### Redress

The Council reiterated its consistent position that it favours a single, national redress scheme led by the Australian Government, with the participation of state and territory governments and non-government institutions and that any scheme should be developed first and foremost with claimants in mind. All claimants, wherever they are located and whichever institution was involved, should be subject to consistent entitlements and be treated fairly and consistently.

The Council submitted that the scheme should be established by legislation in a way that ensures the independence of the scheme from relevant institutions. Participation by relevant institutions should be mandatory and the scheme should be set up in a way that deals with past and future cases.

A redress scheme should include mechanisms for an apology by a senior representative of the institution, if the survivor wishes, and counselling and psychological care, reviewed regularly, should be funded (but not provided) by the institution in which the abuse occurred.

The Council supported a capped scheme that has a table or matrix that takes account of the severity and the impact of the abuse. If past payments are to be taken into account, they should be adjusted for inflation and then deducted from any proposed payment. The Council said the issue of responsibility should ground access to the scheme and it encouraged a narrower formulation of 'responsibility'.

Criteria that govern access to the scheme should be clear and unambiguous and the application process should be as simple as possible. Claims should be determined on the balance of probabilities. The Council submitted that while every step must be taken to avoid trauma to claimants in the claims process, the redress scheme must accord procedural fairness to persons accused and to the relevant institution. If the redress scheme is to be most efficient, affordable and sustainable, there should be no option to pursue civil litigation and a deed of release or other mechanism should be required. The Council noted that the figures put forward in the consultation paper assume governments would be funders of last resort in cases where a non-government institution has no assets or has ceased to exist. The Council did not agree that institutions should be required to contribute to funding of last resort.

Noting that the Royal Commission's redress structure will take time to implement, the Council noted that the Church was giving consideration to modifying its present arrangements based on the Royal Commission's principles for redress, but that any interim arrangement will be far less satisfactory for survivors than an independent national scheme.

### Civil Litigation

The Council submitted that limitation periods (which could be extended under certain circumstances) be maintained for civil claims, set at 25 years after the claimant reached his or her majority.

The Council supported the Royal Commission's recommendation to change the law regarding the duty of institutions provided the change is applied prospectively, and provided the change is applied to all institutions, both non-government and government.

As stated in its submission to Issues Paper No 5, the Council supported the need for legislation for entities to nominate a proper defendant to any claims of child sexual abuse brought against it.

The Council agreed that government and non-government institutions would benefit from more specific guidelines for responding to civil claims in relation to allegations of child sexual abuse.

A copy of the Council's response to the consultation paper on redress and civil litigation, dated 16 March 2016, is available [here](#).

### Royal Commission Report: Redress and Civil Litigation

The Royal Commission delivered a [Report on Redress and Civil Litigation](#) in September 2015.

### Institutional responses to child sexual abuse in out-of-home care

The Royal Commission released its consultation paper on [Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse in Out-of-home care](#) on 8 March 2016.

In its response, the Council supported the Royal Commission's view that a number of strategies, including the implementation of a national reportable conduct scheme, would reduce the incidence of sexual abuse in OOHC.

The Council encouraged the Royal Commission to address a number of issues related to data, including the need for consistent definitions nationally.

The Council supported the development of a national OOHC education strategy, the need to strengthen placement and treatment options for children who display sexually harmful behaviours, and the need for increased support for carers.

The Council strongly endorsed efforts to improve national consistency in regulation and oversight of OOHC system and it supported all recommendations put forward to improve accreditation systems, mandatory reporting requirements and complaint management systems. It also supported improvements in sharing information across jurisdictions. The broadening of OOHC placement types for children with complex needs was commended as it provides an opportunity to improve the education, medical and social outcomes for children in OOHC.

A copy of the Council's response to the consultation paper on institutional responses to child sexual abuse in OOHC, dated 26 August 2016, is available [here](#).

## Best practice principles in responding to complaints of institutional child sexual abuse

During 2016 the Council was invited to make a submission to the Royal Commission's consultation around best practice principles in responding to complaints of child sexual abuse in institutional contexts.

In its response, the Council agreed that robust child sexual abuse complaint handling procedures in institutions will improve child safety and wellbeing, operating to prevent child sexual abuse through strengthening safeguards.

Child safe organisations should encourage people to report all information relevant to child safety and wellbeing, regardless of their connection to the organisation. The language used in any complaints handling procedures will set the tone for their operation. To this end, the Council was concerned that the language of the principles in the Royal Commission's material had an undue criminal bias which might discourage early disclosure and reporting of concerns. The Council suggested some alternate language which would encourage this.

The Council confirmed its support for a national redress scheme, which, it considered, would undertake any required investigation of complaints of historic child sexual abuse in institutional contexts while it was in operation. The Church also remained committed to providing an ongoing pastoral response to victims and survivors of child sexual abuse alongside the redress scheme into the future.

The Council strongly submitted that a nationally consistent, harmonised approach to child sexual abuse complaint handling in institutions is necessary. This should include a national system of independent oversight of reportable conduct investigations and the ability for institutions to share information critical to prevention of abuse, both within jurisdictions and between jurisdictions.

A copy of the Council's response to the consultation paper around best practice principles in responding to complaints of child sexual abuse in institutional contexts, dated 28 August 2016, is available [here](#).

## Records and recordkeeping practices

The Royal Commission released its consultation paper, [Records and recordkeeping practices](#) on 2 September 2016.

In its response, the Council supported the five of the principles developed by the Royal Commission to guide organisations in ensuring best practice in record keeping and promoting access to records, but suggested that a sixth 'enforcement' principle was unnecessary.

The Council acknowledged the leading role of MacKillop Family Services (MFS) in the area of the maintenance of records of men and women who as children were placed in institutional care. While expensive, the Council submitted that other service providers might aim to meet the MFS standards and that a cooperative approach across services and Church authorities might well be more cost effective.

A copy of the Council's response to the Records and Recordkeeping Practices consultation paper, dated 21 November 2016 is available [here](#).

## Criminal justice issues

The Royal Commission released its consultation paper, on [Criminal Justice Issues](#) on 5 September 2016. In responding to the Royal Commission's Consultation Paper, the Council chose to confine itself to the matters addressed in chapter 6 of the paper.

The Council submitted that there should be a nationally consistent criminal law provision in Australia requiring a person who has information leading the person to form a reasonable belief that a sexual offence has been committed against a child to disclose that information to the police unless the person has a reasonable excuse for not doing so.

The Council noted that there may be merit in the enactment of all states and territories of a provision equivalent to s49C(2) of the *Crimes Act 1958* (Vic). However, an assessment should first be made of any adverse practical effects that the provision may have had in Victoria.

The Council submitted that it would not be appropriate to introduce into the criminal law a provision seeking to attach criminal liability to institutions in which child sexual abuse occurs.

A copy of the Council's response to the Criminal Justice consultation paper dated 14 November 2016, is available [here](#).

### Royal Commission Report: Criminal Justice

The Royal Commission delivered its [Report on Criminal Justice](#) in August 2017.

## Strengthening Information Sharing Arrangements

The Council was invited to make a submission to the Royal Commission's consultation around the strengthening of information sharing arrangements in relation to child protection and the investigation of allegations of child sexual abuse in early 2017.

In its response, the Council agreed that the information sharing provisions within and across sectors and jurisdictions should be strengthened, and barriers eliminated, to provide for the safety of children in institutional contexts. The underpinning principle should be that the safety and wellbeing of children is paramount. Where there is tension between this principle and statute or the common law, the safety and wellbeing of children should have priority over the protection of confidentiality, individual reputation and privacy.

The Council is of the view that all faith-based institutions including the Church, its schools, welfare organisations and parishes, should be prescribed bodies for the purposes of both reportable conduct and information sharing schemes nationally.

The Council called for a national approach to ensure consistency within and across jurisdictions, with permitted sharing of a broad range of information, with appropriate safeguards in place.

A copy of the Council's response to the information sharing consultation paper, dated 19 April 2017 is available [here](#).

## Roundtable Discussions

The Royal Commission's roundtables brought together people with a range of expertise and experience that will inform its recommendations. Participation was by invitation from the Royal Commission.

The Council, which consulted with experts from the Church and its services, has contributed to a number of roundtable discussions to date (both public and private) including on:

### Preventing Child Sexual Abuse in Out-of-Home Care

#### 16 April 2014

The Royal Commission's first roundtable followed the release of [Issues Paper 4: Preventing Sexual Abuse of Children in Out-of-Home Care](#), which [generated 63 submissions](#) from a range of individuals and organisations. Some consistent themes emerged in the submissions and these formed the basis of the roundtable discussion. The four broad themes for discussion were:

- Monitoring and oversight
- Recruitment, assessment and training of carers
- Prevention through practice
- Supporting and responding to children in out-of-home-care

A summary of the discussions during the round table is available [here](#).

### Working with Children Checks

#### 16 June 2014

The aim of this roundtable was to assist the Royal Commission to better understand how Working with Children Checks (WWCC) can help prevent child sexual abuse in institutional contexts. The roundtable followed the release of [Issues Paper 1: Working with Children Checks](#), which [generated 80 submissions](#) from a range of individuals and organisations.

Some consistent themes emerged in the submissions and these formed the basis of the roundtable discussion. The four broad themes for discussion were:

- A national approach to a pre-employment scheme
- What are the important elements of any WWCC to prevent child sexual abuse in institutions?
- Who should be subject to a WWCC and who should be exempt?
- How information sharing between state and territory jurisdictions can be improved.

A summary of the discussions that occurred during the round table is available [here](#).

### Royal Commission Report: Working with Children Checks

The Royal Commission issued a [report on Working with Children Checks](#) in August 2015.

## Redress and Civil Litigation (Private Roundtable)

### **2 September, 7 October 4 November 2014**

From September to November 2014 a series of private roundtables were held by the Royal Commission with invited participants including representatives of the Council, to discuss redress and civil litigation.

Other participants included representatives from survivor advocacy and support groups, government representatives, lawyers and insurers, legal academics, faith based organisations and community service organisations.

## Access to Record Keeping (Private Roundtable)

### **12 June 2015**

The Council attended the private roundtable which discussed a number of issues including electronic records, the conversion of hard copy records to electronic records, historical records and the availability of and access to the records of care leavers, the Stolen Generation and Forgotten Australians. Also for discussion were electronic records. The question of standardising of record keeping practices was also on the agenda.

## Making Institutions Child Safe (Private Roundtable)

### **21 April 2016**

At the invitation of the Royal Commission, Council representatives attended a private roundtable which discussed issues including a nationally consistent approach to child safety, the scope and application of child safe standards, monitoring and enforcing child safe standards, capacity building and support to drive cultural change and ongoing improvement, and addressing diverse experiences and needs.

## Criminal Justice Reporting Offences

### **20 - 29 April 2016**

The Royal Commission held a number of roundtables in Sydney to discuss criminal justice and reporting of offences, as part of its work on criminal justice issues.

The first public roundtable discussed criminal offences for failing to report child sexual abuse, including the issue of blind reporting, where the alleged victim's name or identifying details are not given to police.

The second public roundtable discussed adult sex offender treatment programs, including current programs in Australia and internationally, as well as discussing the effectiveness of these programs.

The third public roundtable looked at DPP complaints and oversight mechanisms, including whether there should be avenues for victims to seek review of decisions not to prosecute and whether there should be external oversight of DPPs.



## Multi-disciplinary and specialist policing responses

### 15 June 2016

This public roundtable focused on responses to child sexual abuse when there is a multi-disciplinary approach from police and other agencies. Issues for discussion included current multi-disciplinary and specialist policing responses looking at approaches in a number of states, and police communications with institutions, parents and the community.

A copy of the Royal Commission's transcript for this roundtable is available [here](#).

### Royal Commission Report: Criminal Justice

The Royal Commission delivered a [Report on Criminal Justice](#) in August 2017.

## Advocacy and Therapeutic Support Services

### 31 May 2016

Council representatives attended this roundtable, which looked at issues including:

- the current shape of the service system for child and adult victims and survivors of child sexual abuse in institutional contexts (including addressing the diverse experiences and circumstances of victims and survivors);
- a national principles-based approach (including strategies for improving service delivery);
- workforce development (including trauma-informed approaches across service sectors);
- improving collaboration and integration; and
- best practice models of service delivery.

## Canon Law (Private Roundtable)

### 20 June 2016

Council representatives attended the private roundtable which considered the operation of canon law. Participants discussed topics including the relationship between canon law and civil law, canon law and secrecy, the canonical disciplinary system, canon law and clericalism, canon law and the sacrament of reconciliation, and the transparency and effectiveness of canon law process more broadly.

## Royal Commission research

The Royal Commission undertook an extensive policy and research program that drew upon the findings made in public hearings and private sessions, as well as generating new research-based evidence. Research areas include prevention, reporting and responding to allegations of child sexual abuse as well as support and redress.

The Commission's policy work was focused on making recommendations to improve the safety of children in institutions into the future. Royal Commission research themes include:

- causes;
- prevention;
- identification;
- institutional responses;
- government responses;
- treatment and support needs;
- institutions of interest; and
- ensuring a positive impact.

The Royal Commission's research program included:

- descriptive research (background information);
- primary research (to fill evidence gaps); and
- research that summarises existing evidence (what is known and what works).

The Royal Commission published several research reports on its website in the days before the release of its final report. The Council has not had the opportunity to analyse these later reports.

The Council is aware that not all Royal Commission research is, or will be, made public. For example, the Royal Commission has declined to release to the Council some of its research about particular Church institutions and Church-related matters.

## Council assistance with Royal Commission research

In its research role, the Council has:

- Initiated research into best practice procedures, policies and structures to protect children,
- Assisted in identifying systemic institutional failures that have impeded the protection of children,

- Provided information to the Royal Commission concerning the various procedures, policies and structures that have been put in place by Church organisations over the past 25 years to deal with complaints and instances of child sexual abuse and improvements which might be made to them to provide greater protection for children, and
- Undertaken preliminary research and surveys into the responses of the Catholic and broader community to the abuse crisis in the Church, and other issues.

### Policy and Curriculum in Schools

The Council provided varying levels of input to a number of Royal Commission research projects, most notable the research project to determine the extent and type of child safety programs in Catholic Schools which commenced in October 2013.

The Royal Commission initially requested feedback from Catholic Education Offices on a range of issues including any evaluation or assessment on the success of existing programs and the general approach to data gathering.

The Council coordinated the response of Catholic Education Offices (CEOs) and Commissions (CECs) and submitted the requested material to the Royal Commission on 14 March 2014.

The project was subsequently fine-tuned by the Royal Commission into an audit of primary school-based sexual abuse prevention policy and curriculum for children aged 5 to 12 years, relative to the current international evidence base and the Royal Commission's draft report was provided to the Council for comment on 6 February 2015.

On considering the preliminary findings, the Council was concerned at the apparent gaps in information received from the Catholic education sector. It was the Council's view that both the audit tool devised by the researchers and the report findings needed to be reviewed with the benefit of full information from CEOs and CECs nationally.

Following discussions with the Royal Commission, Council was granted time to obtain further information from CECs and CEOs nationally in direct response to the audit criteria. The Council worked with Catholic Education Offices (CEOs) and Catholic Education Commissions (CECs) nationally to review the draft report, its methodology and findings, and to identify further relevant policy and curricula that was not previously available to the research team.

Constructive feedback was also provided in relation to both the audit tool matrix and approach of the project. The Council remained concerned whether the audit matrix tool and approach of the research project would produce meaningful information and a balanced result. Those reservations were communicated to the Royal Commission. No response was received.

Following the release of the Royal Commission's final report, the Council became aware that a report that appears to be related to the above project, dated December 2017, has been [published](#) on the Royal Commission's website. The Council has not had an opportunity to review this report or its methodology to determine whether it provides a fair and accurate picture of the true state of policy and procedure in place in Catholic schools.

### Certain Catholic institutions of interest

By mid-2015 the Royal Commission flagged it would conduct specific research in relation to the histories of a number of religious congregations, as follows:

The theme: What is the history of particular institutions of interest? Five projects were identified by the Royal Commission. Each one focuses on the Catholic Church. These included:

- **History of Salesians of Don Bosco:** This project reviews publicly available information to provide a history of the Salesians of Don Bosco, including the structure, operation, purpose and activities, a bibliography of documentation and histories and summaries of inquiries conducted in relation to the Order.
- **History of the Christian Brothers:** This project reviews publicly available information to provide a history of the Christian Brothers, including the structure, operation, purpose and activities, a bibliography of documentation and histories and summaries of inquiries conducted in relation to the Order.
- **History of the Sisters of Mercy:** This project reviews publicly available information to provide a history of the Sisters of Mercy, including the structure, operation, purpose and activities, a bibliography of documentation and histories and summaries of inquiries conducted in relation to the Order.
- **History of De La Salle:** This project reviews publicly available information to provide a history of the De La Salle, including the structure, operation, purpose and activities, a bibliography of documentation and histories and summaries of inquiries conducted in relation to the Order.
- **History of Marist Brothers:** This project reviews publicly available information to provide a history of the Marist Brothers, including the structure, operation, purpose and activities, a bibliography of documentation and histories and summaries of inquiries conducted in relation to the Order.

The Council and the religious institutes concerned were not invited to contribute to these projects and the Royal Commission did not indicate that it was conducting equivalent research into any other institutions. The work has not been released publicly.

### Institutional Responses

Another body of research flagged by the Royal Commission related to institutional responses. The focus was on best practice for institutional responses where child sexual abuse had occurred. Nine projects were identified. The following were of particular interest to the Council, but as far as the Council is aware no research outcomes have been made public.

### Literature review on published literature critiquing procedures and protocols of Towards Healing Griffith University

A review identifying academic research from the social sciences and other extant literature, this study informs an analysis and critique of procedures and protocols of response to allegations of child sexual abuse by institutional personnel in faith based institutions, including *Towards Healing*.

## **Review non-personal submissions received in response to the Towards Healing issues paper**

### **Griffith University**

This project is a review of submissions on *Towards Healing* received by the Royal Commission from institutions, government, and non-government organisations.

## **Review personal submissions received in response to the Towards Healing issues paper**

### **Griffith University**

This project is a review of personal submissions on *Towards Healing* received by the Royal Commission from individuals.

## **Monetary compensation and benefits schemes in Australia**

### **Royal Commission**

This project is a review of compensation and benefits schemes in Australia including civil litigation, victims of crime, state redress schemes, faith based schemes and other relevant schemes.

## **History of the Code of Canon Law as it applies to Australia to the disciplining of a member of the clergy for sexually abusing a child**

### **La Trobe University**

This project is a review of the history of canon law covering the period from 1917 until the present day. It explores whether canon law was capable of disciplining clergy for sexually abusing a child, and whether canon law required or inhibited the reporting of such abuse to civil authorities.

## Council legal engagement with the Royal Commission

The Council has a small in-house legal and policy team which coordinated the Council's legal and policy response to the Royal Commission.

Upon the Council's establishment it was recognised that external legal assistance would be required to handle the extensive document production and legal representation requirements of what was anticipated to be the most extensive Royal Commission in Australia's history and one that would be strongly focused on institutions of the Church. Accordingly, following a competitive tender process, the Council appointed Gilbert and Tobin as its external legal adviser.

Barristers were also engaged to appear before the Royal Commission for the Council and the Church authorities required to appear.

Anticipating that the Royal Commission's structure would enable it to conduct overlapping or consecutive hearings involving different issues and organisations of the Church, something which eventuated on more than one occasion, the Council engaged two Senior Counsel, Jane Needham SC and Peter Gray SC, to represent it and the Church authorities involved in individual Royal Commission case studies. For some case studies it was thought desirable to engage a third senior counsel, Michael Wheelahan QC of the Melbourne Bar.

Senior Counsel were assisted as necessary by junior counsel, John Gooley, Bede Kelleher, Amy Munro, Tiffany Wong, Andrew Woods, Paul Lawrie, Paul Santamaria, Aruna Sathanapally, Hernan Pintos-Lopez and Sam Duggan, who each appeared from time to time.

These external legal representatives worked with the Council in taking a cooperative and responsive approach to the Church's engagement with the Royal Commission and the Council takes this opportunity to acknowledge and thank them for their diligent work.

In some instances, occasionally at the instigation of the Council, but always in consultation with the Council, some individuals required to appear before the Royal Commission engaged separate legal representation to cover the interests then under scrutiny.

The work of the legal team had the following main components.

- Legal research and production of legal issues papers, discussion papers and other advice for the Council and Council CEO: this work was done almost exclusively by the in-house team.
- Preparing submissions in response to issues papers and consultation papers issued by the Royal Commission: while this work was mainly done by the in-house team following extensive consultation within the Church, on occasion the Council has been assisted by subject matter experts from various Church organisations who have undertaken the role of principal author for particular issues papers. Larger submissions, for example the submission on Towards Healing, have also had input from Gilbert and Tobin and counsel.
- Producing documents in response to summonses and notices to produce issued by the Royal Commission: to the end of the Catholic wrap-up hearing in February 2017, more than 386,000 documents had been produced by Church authorities in response to notices issued by the Royal Commission. The document production process was intensive and required very extensive legal work, involving, amongst other things, discussions and negotiations with the Royal Commission,

assembly and scanning of documents, reviewing documents for relevance to the terms of the notice, indexing documents and entering them into a document management system compatible with the Royal Commission's system. The work had to be done within strict time limits imposed by the Royal Commission. Most of the work was done within Gilbert and Tobin, using paralegals and junior lawyers to the greatest extent possible.

- Briefing counsel and preparing witness statements for case studies involving Church authorities: one third of the Royal Commission's public hearings directly involved Church authorities and individuals associated with the Church. For the majority of those hearings the Royal Commission called for witness statements from a long list of Church personnel. The preparation of those witness statements was largely completed by Gilbert and Tobin and counsel, with input from the Council's in-house team. When witnesses were subsequently summonsed to appear, members of the legal team worked with them to prepare them for the hearing.
- Preparing written accounts requested by the Royal Commission of particular events or circumstances: preparation of these accounts required review of diocesan or religious institute documents and interviews with Church officials. The work generally involved input, to varying degrees, from the in-house team, Gilbert and Tobin and counsel.
- Appearing at hearings: generally one of our senior counsel led the legal team at hearings. The team had to be familiar with the tender bundle of relevant documents which the Royal Commission prepared and with other documents relevant to the evidence to be given at the hearing. IT and logistical support was also provided to the legal team and Church witnesses.
- Preparing written submissions in response to written submissions of Counsel Assisting the Royal Commission: At the conclusion of oral evidence the Royal Commission set a timetable for the provision of written submissions around findings that were open to it on the evidence adduced at the hearing. In the early stages of the Royal Commission the written submissions of Counsel Assisting were made public soon after they had been filed. This resulted in injustice in a couple of cases and the practice was changed so that submissions were not made public until submissions were closed, if at all.

The written submissions of Counsel Assisting sometimes ran to more than 100 pages and submissions in reply submitted on behalf of the Council and Church authorities were normally of similar length. It was the Council's policy not to challenge the proposed findings of Counsel Assisting where such findings were reasonably open to the Royal Commission on the evidence, even those which recommended an adverse finding against a Church Authority or individual Church personnel. The Council made contrary submissions only where the finding proposed by Counsel Assisting was not, in the view of the Council, fairly available to the Royal Commission on the evidence. Again, only when justified on the evidence, the Council also provided clarification, and/or submissions proposing additional findings to the Royal Commission, thus sometimes placing issues on the record for the consideration of the Commissioners which Counsel Assisting had not raised. The Council has analysed the impact of these submissions on the Royal Commission's case study reports in most instances.

In terms of process, junior counsel generally prepared the first draft of the Council's submissions in reply, with subsequent development in consultation with the legal team, relevant witnesses and the relevant Church authority. Senior counsel settled the submissions.

- Findings: Having considered submissions by Counsel Assisting and interested parties including the Council, the Royal Commission completed a report in which it assessed the evidence and other materials, and made findings of fact. These final case study reports have been delivered to Government and in due course tabled in Parliament and made public, wholly or in part. To date, the Royal Commission has completed (and the Government has released publicly) reports in twelve case studies concerning Church authorities. They are:

[Case Study 4:](#) The experiences of four survivors with the *Towards Healing* process.

[Case Study 6:](#) The response of a primary school and the Toowoomba Catholic Education Office to the conduct of Gerard Byrnes.

[Case Study 8:](#) Mr John Ellis's experience of the *Towards Healing* process and civil litigation.

[Case Study 9:](#) The responses of the Archdiocese of Adelaide, and the South Australian Police, to allegations of child sexual abuse at St Ann's Special School.

[Case Study 11:](#) Congregation of Christian Brothers in Western Australia's response to child sexual abuse at Castledare Junior Orphanage, St Vincent's Orphanage Clontarf, St Mary's Agricultural School Tardun and Bindoon Farm School.

[Case Study 13:](#) The response of the Marist Brothers to allegations of child sexual abuse against Brothers Kostka Chute and Gregory Sutton.

[Case study 14:](#) The response of the Catholic Diocese of Wollongong to allegations of child sexual abuse against John Gerard Nestor.

[Case Study 16:](#) The public hearing inquired into the principles, practices and procedures of *The Melbourne Response* adopted by the Archdiocese of Melbourne.

[Case Study 26:](#) The response of the Sisters of Mercy, the Diocese of Rockhampton and the Queensland Government to allegations of child sexual abuse at St Joseph's Orphanage, Neerkol.

[Case Study 28:](#) The response of the Diocese of Ballarat and of other Church authorities in Ballarat to allegations of child sexual abuse against clergy or religious, and the response of Victoria Police to allegations of child sexual abuse against clergy or religious which took place within the Diocese of Ballarat.

[Case Study 35:](#) The response of the Archdiocese of Melbourne to allegations of child sexual abuse by priests of the Archdiocese.

[Case Study 41:](#) Institutional responses to allegations of the sexual abuse of children with disability.

[Case Study 45:](#) Problematic and harmful sexual behaviours of children in schools

- At time of writing, there are two case studies involving Church authorities for which reports have been provided to the government by the Royal Commission, with a recommendation that they not be publicly released, until pending investigations and legal proceedings run their course. They are:

[Case Study 43:](#) The response of Church authorities in the Maitland-Newcastle region to allegations of child sexual abuse by clergy and religious.



[Case Study 44:](#) The responses of Church authorities to allegations of child sexual abuse made against John Joseph Farrell.

- The Royal Commission advised that there would not be a final report for the following case studies in which the Council and Church representatives participated:

[Case Study 24:](#) Preventing child sexual abuse in out-of-home care and responding to allegations of child sexual abuse occurring in out-of-home care. Findings and recommendations in relation to the Royal Commission's work on out of-home-care were included in the Royal Commission's final report.

[Case Study 25:](#) A public hearing in relation to redress and civil litigation in which invited persons and institutions to speak to their written submissions to the Royal Commission's consultation paper on redress and civil litigation. Findings and recommendations were included in the Royal Commission's redress and civil litigation report.

[Case Study 31:](#) The evidence of retired Bishop Geoffrey Robinson regarding the history and development of the Catholic Church's response to child sexual abuse prior to the introduction of *Towards Healing*.

[Case Study 38:](#) A public hearing into the experiences of survivors of child sexual abuse in an institutional context in the criminal justice system. Invited persons and institutions spoke to their written submissions on the to the Royal Commission's consultation paper on Criminal Justice. Findings and recommendations were included in the Royal Commission's criminal justice report.

[Case Study 50 – Catholic Church Final Hearing:](#) The Royal Commission did not provide a separate report for the Final Hearing. Issues arising in this case study are considered in the Royal Commission's final report.

---

## Stakeholder engagement

Over the past years the Council developed an extensive stakeholder engagement program designed to ensure that information about the Council and Royal Commission's work is available to anyone interested.

This engagement was particularly important in ensuring the Catholic community is aware of developments within the Church and is a part of the reform process.

Material was provided to a wide range of individuals and organisations through the Council's contact lists and distribution networks.

An important part of the stakeholder engagement program was direct contact with different parts of the Catholic community.

## Communications and media

The Council was responsible for all communications from the Church about the Royal Commission. It was charged with being the public voice of the Church in relation to the Royal Commission and related issues.

As a result the Council took an early decision to work as hard as possible to be a voice in as much of the media coverage about the Church and the Royal Commission as possible.

This resulted in the Council putting in place an extensive range of communication channels to provide the Catholic community and others with information about its activities and the operations of the Royal Commission.

The Council was available and responsive to incoming media requests having taken part in more than 200 media interviews across print, radio, online and TV outlets in the past four years and issues over 180 media release (see [Appendix 16](#) - Council Media releases) to approximately 500 media contacts in both secular and Catholic media outlets.

Council media and communications material was often reproduced through Church media outlets and within parish, diocesan and congregational communication channels.

## Media appearances

Since the beginning of 2013, Council CEO Francis Sullivan appeared in the media across radio, television, print and online outlets. He has written opinion pieces which have appeared in many of the country's major metropolitan newspapers. Media engagements included:

- regular appearances on ABC radio and TV programs: AM, PM, Lateline, The Religion Report, Sunday Nights and News 24;
- print coverage of the Royal Commission in metropolitan and regional Fairfax and News Limited outlets, where he has been quoted regularly;
- online outlets such as The Conversation and The Guardian;
- regular quotes in AAP stories which are reprinted in many regional newspapers;
- appearances on commercial television and radio news bulletins and breakfast shows;
- feature articles written for the Daily Telegraph, The West Australian, The Australian, the ABC's Religion and Ethics website;
- Four Corners program on *The Melbourne Response*; and
- appearances in international programs including the BBC's Religion Report and the BBC's Panorama program.

## Prepared speeches

Throughout the course of the Royal Commission the TJHC CEO Francis Sullivan has addressed and presented at many hundreds of community and stakeholders meetings. His focus topics have ranged

across the activities of the Council, the response of the Church leadership to the Royal Commission, the challenges facing the Church, and the way forward.

Only at a handful of these events did he present a prepared speech (see [Appendix 17](#) - Prepared speeches)

These speeches are in addition to well over 120 parish and stakeholder visits Francis Sullivan made since the beginning of 2013.

Francis Sullivan and Council Chair, Neville Owen have also addressed the annual peak meetings of the ACBC and CRA.

## Digital assets

The Council's website, [www.tjhcouncil.org.au](http://www.tjhcouncil.org.au), has provided a range of information and materials dealing with the Royal Commission and the response from the Church including:

- information about the activities of both the Council and the Royal Commission;
- comprehensive coverage of the public hearings involving the Church including daily updates, transcripts and witness statements;
- links to support services for survivors both within the Church and independent of the Church;
- media coverage of the Royal Commission and the Council;
- archives of the Council's newsletters and media statements;
- statements and other communications from Church leaders and the Catholic community dealing with child sexual abuse;
- community resources available to the Catholic community and others to help understand and engage with the issues around child sexual abuse; and
- videos, produced by the Council, ranging across a general introduction to the Council and the Royal Commission, information on specific public hearings, speeches and public policy issues.

## e-Newsletter

The Council produced more than 190 issues of the e-Newsletter (see [Appendix 18](#) - Council Newsletters) over the life of the Royal Commission which have been distributed each week to some 5,500 subscribers including media and government representatives, bishops, priests, religious and other Church personnel, survivors of abuse, Catholics and other key stakeholders. The newsletter includes a weekly rundown of the activities of the Council, the blog from CEO Francis Sullivan (see [Appendix 19](#) - Council Blogs), relevant media coverage both locally and internationally and information from the Royal Commission including upcoming hearings, round tables and notices.

The newsletters are stored on the Council's website and are an important record of the Council's engagement with the Royal Commission and the Catholic and broader community.

## Hearing room updates

During the course of the Royal Commission case studies involving the Church the Council media office produced and distributed to Church authorities and other stakeholders 'Hearing Room Updates' which were a short summary of the day's evidence.

See [Appendix 20](#) - Council Case study 'Hearing room updates' for a list and links to each of the Hearing room updates can be found at

---

## Contacts

### Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse:

The Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse has now concluded.

Any enquiries relating to the Royal Commission, including access to records, should be directed to the [Attorney-General's Department](#).

W: [www.childabuseroyalcommission.gov.au](http://www.childabuseroyalcommission.gov.au)

### Church support:

If you or someone you know was sexually abused as a child by a priest, religious or other Church personnel please contact the local police or the Royal Commission or you can contact *Towards Healing* in your state by calling:

1300 369 977 New South Wales/Australian Capital Territory

0418 736 890 Northern Territory

1800 337 928 Queensland

(07) 3336 9474

1800 139 020 South Australia

1800 356 613 Tasmania

(03) 6108 6222

1800 816 030 Victoria, or you can contact *The Melbourne Response* on (03) 9225 7979

1800 072 390 Western Australia

### Truth Justice and Healing Council:

On 30 April 2018 the Council ceased operations and management of the Council website and media and other contacts for the Council were transferred to the ACBC.

Anyone wishing to make inquiries about the Council and its activities should contact the ACBC.

The ACBC has agreed to host the Council's website. If there are any issues with links or other problems with the site, please contact the [ACBC](#).

W: [www.tjhcouncil.org.au](http://www.tjhcouncil.org.au)

## Appendix 1 - Truth Justice and Healing Council Terms of Reference

The Council is charged to:

1. Subject to directions from the Supervisory Group and any powers reserved to the Supervisory Group and consistent with the civil, canonical and pastoral obligations of each Bishop and Congregational Leader, to organise, manage and coordinate the Catholic Church's representation in, response to and engagement with the Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse, including:
  - a. the preparation of documentation and legal submissions;
  - b. the facilitation of materials for the Royal Commission; and
  - c. the organisation of individuals appearing before the Royal Commission in relation to the matters associated with the Church.
2. Report regularly to the Supervisory Group through the Chair of the Supervisory Group on:
  - a. the activities and operations of the Council; and
  - b. the Royal Commission, its conduct and the ramifications for the Church's agencies, processes, procedures and pastoral life.
3. Review the formulation, development and compliance with existing Church protocols and policies in relation to child safety, protection and welfare, and provide recommendations to the Supervisory Group.
4. In collaboration with Church leaders, to be responsible for and to manage all public relations and communications for the Church in relation to the Royal Commission.
5. Provide a focal point for other stakeholders associated with the Royal Commission.
6. Undertake research into the issue of sex abuse consistent with the requirements of the Royal Commission and the Supervisory Group. In discharging its responsibilities, the Council is to refer the following matters to the Supervisory Group for its prior consideration and approval:
  - formal submissions on behalf of the Church to the Royal Commission;
  - annual budget;
  - material expenditure outside the approved budget; and
  - changes to the existing processes and protocols operating within the Church in Australia including:
    - *Towards Healing*,
    - Integrity in Ministry,
    - Integrity in the Service of the Church, and
    - Melbourne Response.

- changes to existing structures in relation to the Church's handling of sexual/criminal abuse in Australia:
    - NCPS,
    - Bishops Committee for Professional Standards,
    - Diocesan and Congregational Committees, and
    - Independent Commissioners, Compensation Panel and Carelink under *The Melbourne Response* noting also that the approval of the Archbishop of Melbourne will be required.
7. The Council is also to refer to the Supervisory Group for its consideration any recommendations it would make in relation to amendments to the following:
- Working with Children Checks,
  - reporting to police,
  - sacrament of confession,
  - vicarious liability of bishops and Church leaders,
  - accessing assets held by Church property trusts to pay compensation,
  - extending the Statute of Limitations, and
  - introduction of criminal offences linked to the conduct of Church leaders.



## Appendix 2 - Council Meeting attendance record

Name	Member from	Member until	Number of meetings eligible to attend	Number of meetings attended
Hon. Barry O'Keefe AM QC (Chair)	3 April 2013	24 April 2014	8	5
Hon. Neville Owen (Chair)	5 June 2014	30 April 2018	22	22
Ms Elizabeth Proust AO (Deputy Chair)	3 April 2013	30 April 2018	30	25
Archbishop Mark Coleridge	3 April 2013	30 April 2018	30	26
Hon. Greg Crafter AO	3 April 2013	30 April 2018	30	28
Prof Greg Craven AO	3 April 2013	30 April 2018	30	20
Mr Stephen Elder OAM	3 April 2013	30 April 2018	30	22
Dr Susan Gordon AM	3 April 2013	8 October 2013	5	1
Prof Maria Harries AM	3 April 2013	30 April 2018	30	29
Mr Jack Heath	3 April 2013	30 November 2016	20	16
Sr Maree Marsh csb	3 April 2013	30 April 2018	30	29
Prof Rosemary Sheehan AM	3 April 2013	30 April 2018	30	21
Dr Marian Sullivan	3 April 2013	30 April 2018	30	23
Bishop Bill Wright	3 April 2013	30 April 2018	30	23

## Appendix 3 - Royal Commission Letters Patent



ELIZABETH THE SECOND, by the Grace of God Queen of Australia  
and Her other Realms and Territories, Head of the Commonwealth:

TO

The Honourable Justice Peter David McClellan AM,

Mr Robert Atkinson,

The Honourable Justice Jennifer Ann Coate,

Mr Robert William Fitzgerald AM,

Dr Helen Mary Milroy, and

Mr Andrew James Marshall Murray

GREETING

WHEREAS all children deserve a safe and happy childhood.

AND Australia has undertaken international obligations to take all appropriate legislative, administrative, social and educational measures to protect children from sexual abuse and other forms of abuse, including measures for the prevention, identification, reporting, referral, investigation, treatment and follow up of incidents of child abuse.

AND all forms of child sexual abuse are a gross violation of a child's right to this protection and a crime under Australian law and may be accompanied by other unlawful or improper treatment of children, including physical assault, exploitation, deprivation and neglect.

AND child sexual abuse and other related unlawful or improper treatment of children have a long-term cost to individuals, the economy and society.

AND public and private institutions, including child-care, cultural, educational, religious, sporting and other institutions, provide important services and support for children and their families that are beneficial to children's development.

ENTERED ON RECORD by me in Register of Patents No. 48 , page 2 , on 11 January 2013

  
Secretary to the Federal Executive Council

AND it is important that claims of systemic failures by institutions in relation to allegations and incidents of child sexual abuse and any related unlawful or improper treatment of children be fully explored, and that best practice is identified so that it may be followed in the future both to protect against the occurrence of child sexual abuse and to respond appropriately when any allegations and incidents of child sexual abuse occur, including holding perpetrators to account and providing justice to victims.

AND it is important that those affected by child sexual abuse can share their experiences to assist with healing and to inform the development of strategies and reforms that your inquiry will seek to identify.

AND noting that, without diminishing its criminality or seriousness, your inquiry will not specifically examine the issue of child sexual abuse and related matters outside institutional contexts, but that any recommendations you make are likely to improve the response to all forms of child sexual abuse in all contexts.

AND all Australian Governments have expressed their support for, and undertaken to cooperate with, your inquiry.

NOW THEREFORE We do, by these Our Letters Patent issued in Our name by Our Governor-General of the Commonwealth of Australia on the advice of the Federal Executive Council and under the Constitution of the Commonwealth of Australia, the *Royal Commissions Act 1902* and every other enabling power, appoint you to be a Commission of inquiry, and require and authorise you, to inquire into institutional responses to allegations and incidents of child sexual abuse and related matters, and in particular, without limiting the scope of your inquiry, the following matters:

- (a) what institutions and governments should do to better protect children against child sexual abuse and related matters in institutional contexts in the future;
- (b) what institutions and governments should do to achieve best practice in encouraging the reporting of, and responding to reports or information about, allegations, incidents or risks of child sexual abuse and related matters in institutional contexts;
- (c) what should be done to eliminate or reduce impediments that currently exist for responding appropriately to child sexual abuse and related matters in institutional contexts, including addressing failures in, and impediments to, reporting, investigating and responding to allegations and incidents of abuse;

- (d) what institutions and governments should do to address, or alleviate the impact of, past and future child sexual abuse and related matters in institutional contexts, including, in particular, in ensuring justice for victims through the provision of redress by institutions, processes for referral for investigation and prosecution and support services.

AND We direct you to make any recommendations arising out of your inquiry that you consider appropriate, including recommendations about any policy, legislative, administrative or structural reforms.

AND, without limiting the scope of your inquiry or the scope of any recommendations arising out of your inquiry that you may consider appropriate, We direct you, for the purposes of your inquiry and recommendations, to have regard to the following matters:

- (e) the experience of people directly or indirectly affected by child sexual abuse and related matters in institutional contexts, and the provision of opportunities for them to share their experiences in appropriate ways while recognising that many of them will be severely traumatised or will have special support needs;
- (f) the need to focus your inquiry and recommendations on systemic issues, recognising nevertheless that you will be informed by individual cases and may need to make referrals to appropriate authorities in individual cases;
- (g) the adequacy and appropriateness of the responses by institutions, and their officials, to reports and information about allegations, incidents or risks of child sexual abuse and related matters in institutional contexts;
- (h) changes to laws, policies, practices and systems that have improved over time the ability of institutions and governments to better protect against and respond to child sexual abuse and related matters in institutional contexts.

AND We further declare that you are not required by these Our Letters Patent to inquire, or to continue to inquire, into a particular matter to the extent that you are satisfied that the matter has been, is being, or will be, sufficiently and appropriately dealt with by another inquiry or investigation or a criminal or civil proceeding.

AND, without limiting the scope of your inquiry or the scope of any recommendations arising out of your inquiry that you may consider appropriate, We direct you, for the purposes of your inquiry and recommendations, to consider the following matters, and We authorise you to take (or refrain from taking) any action that you consider appropriate arising out of your consideration:



- (i) the need to establish mechanisms to facilitate the timely communication of information, or the furnishing of evidence, documents or things, in accordance with section 6P of the *Royal Commissions Act 1902* or any other relevant law, including, for example, for the purpose of enabling the timely investigation and prosecution of offences;
- (j) the need to establish investigation units to support your inquiry;
- (k) the need to ensure that evidence that may be received by you that identifies particular individuals as having been involved in child sexual abuse or related matters is dealt with in a way that does not prejudice current or future criminal or civil proceedings or other contemporaneous inquiries;
- (l) the need to establish appropriate arrangements in relation to current and previous inquiries, in Australia and elsewhere, for evidence and information to be shared with you in ways consistent with relevant obligations so that the work of those inquiries, including, with any necessary consents, the testimony of witnesses, can be taken into account by you in a way that avoids unnecessary duplication, improves efficiency and avoids unnecessary trauma to witnesses;
- (m) the need to ensure that institutions and other parties are given a sufficient opportunity to respond to requests and requirements for information, documents and things, including, for example, having regard to any need to obtain archived material.

AND We appoint you, the Honourable Justice Peter David McClellan AM, to be the Chair of the Commission.

AND We declare that you are a relevant Commission for the purposes of sections 4 and 5 of the *Royal Commissions Act 1902*.

AND We declare that you are authorised to conduct your inquiry into any matter under these Our Letters Patent in combination with any inquiry into the same matter, or a matter related to that matter, that you are directed or authorised to conduct by any Commission, or under any order or appointment, made by any of Our Governors of the States or by the Government of any of Our Territories.

AND We declare that in these Our Letters Patent:

**child** means a child within the meaning of the Convention on the Rights of the Child of 20 November 1989.

**government** means the Government of the Commonwealth or of a State or Territory, and includes any non-government institution that undertakes, or has undertaken, activities on behalf of a government.

**institution** means any public or private body, agency, association, club, institution, organisation or other entity or group of entities of any kind (whether incorporated or unincorporated), and however described, and:

- (i) includes, for example, an entity or group of entities (including an entity or group of entities that no longer exists) that provides, or has at any time provided, activities, facilities, programs or services of any kind that provide the means through which adults have contact with children, including through their families; and
- (ii) does not include the family.

**institutional context:** child sexual abuse happens in an **institutional context** if, for example:

- (i) it happens on premises of an institution, where activities of an institution take place, or in connection with the activities of an institution; or
- (ii) it is engaged in by an official of an institution in circumstances (including circumstances involving settings not directly controlled by the institution) where you consider that the institution has, or its activities have, created, facilitated, increased, or in any way contributed to, (whether by act or omission) the risk of child sexual abuse or the circumstances or conditions giving rise to that risk; or
- (iii) it happens in any other circumstances where you consider that an institution is, or should be treated as being, responsible for adults having contact with children.

**law** means a law of the Commonwealth or of a State or Territory.

*official*, of an institution, includes:

- (i) any representative (however described) of the institution or a related entity; and
- (ii) any member, officer, employee, associate, contractor or volunteer (however described) of the institution or a related entity; and
- (iii) any person, or any member, officer, employee, associate, contractor or volunteer (however described) of a body or other entity, who provides services to, or for, the institution or a related entity; and
- (iv) any other person who you consider is, or should be treated as if the person were, an official of the institution.

*related matters* means any unlawful or improper treatment of children that is, either generally or in any particular instance, connected or associated with child sexual abuse.

AND We:

- (n) require you to begin your inquiry as soon as practicable, and
- (o) require you to make your inquiry as expeditiously as possible; and
- (p) require you to submit to Our Governor-General:
  - (i) first and as soon as possible, and in any event not later than 30 June 2014 (or such later date as Our Prime Minister may, by notice in the *Gazette*, fix on your recommendation), an initial report of the results of your inquiry, the recommendations for early consideration you may consider appropriate to make in this initial report, and your recommendation for the date, not later than 31 December 2015, to be fixed for the submission of your final report; and
  - (ii) then and as soon as possible, and in any event not later than the date Our Prime Minister may, by notice in the *Gazette*, fix on your recommendation, your final report of the results of your inquiry and your recommendations; and
- (q) authorise you to submit to Our Governor-General any additional interim reports that you consider appropriate.

IN WITNESS, We have caused these Our Letters to be made Patent.

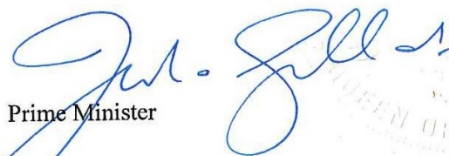
WITNESS Quentin Bryce, Governor-General of the  
Commonwealth of Australia.

Dated 11<sup>th</sup> Jan. 2013



Governor-General

By Her Excellency's Command



Prime Minister



### Letters Patent dated 13 November 2014

ELIZABETH THE SECOND, by the Grace of God Queen of Australia and Her other Realms and Territories, Head of the Commonwealth:

TO

The Honourable Justice Peter David McClellan AM,  
Mr Robert Atkinson,  
The Honourable Justice Jennifer Ann Coate,  
Mr Robert William Fitzgerald AM,  
Dr Helen Mary Milroy, and  
Mr Andrew James Marshall Murray

GREETING

WHEREAS We, by Our Letters Patent issued in Our name by Our Governor-General of the Commonwealth of Australia, appointed you to be a Commission of inquiry, required and authorised you to inquire into certain matters, and required you to submit to Our Governor-General a report of the results of your inquiry, and your recommendations, not later than 31 December 2015.

AND it is desired to amend Our Letters Patent to require you to submit to Our Governor-General a report of the results of your inquiry, and your recommendations, not later than 15 December 2017.

NOW THEREFORE We do, by these Our Letters Patent issued in Our name by Our Governor-General of the Commonwealth of Australia on the advice of the Federal Executive Council and under the Constitution of the Commonwealth of Australia, the *Royal Commissions Act 1902* and every other enabling power, amend the Letters Patent issued to you by omitting from subparagraph (p)(i) of the Letters Patent "31 December 2015" and substituting "15 December 2017".

IN WITNESS, We have caused these Our Letters to be made Patent.

WITNESS General the Honourable Sir Peter Cosgrove AK MC (Ret'd), Governor-General of the Commonwealth of Australia.

Dated 13th November 2014  
Governor-General  
By His Excellency's Command  
Prime Minister

## Appendix 4 - Council Community engagement meetings

### 2018

22 March [Address: Concerned Catholics Canberra and Goulburn](#)

12 February NCEC, Melbourne

### 2017

12 December Ecumenical Redress Conversation, Sydney

5 December Presentation to Faith Based Dispute Resolution Conference, Melbourne

30 November Address Commonwealth Ombudsman Forum, Canberra

27 November Address National Directors of Catholic Education

24 November Facilitate St John of God retreat, Perth

23 November Address to Community of the Way, Archdiocese of Perth

15 November Participation on Redress Taskforce, Sydney

14 November Address to Catholic Secondary Principals Australia, Adelaide

4 November Address to Catholic School Parents Australia, Hobart

19 October Address to Catholic Community of Geelong, Geelong

10 October Address to the Western Australian Bar Association

25 August Address to South Australian Catholic Principals, Adelaide

24 August Address biennial National Catholic Education Media, Marketing and Communications Conference, Surfers Paradise

10 August Dandenong Catholic Deanery Resource Dinner

3 August Address Professional Development Workshops at the Office of Director of Public Prosecutions, NSW

2 August Parish visit, Our Lady of Good Council Parish, Frenchs Forest

4 July Address to Clergy Life and Ministry National Directors Annual Conference, North Sydney

28 June [TJHC joins Sandringham community at Spirituality in the Pub Melbourne](#)

27 June Address to Jeff Whalan Executive Learning Group, Canberra

22 June [TJHC addresses CRA National Assembly](#)

21 June Address, CRA National Assembly Dinner, Melbourne

3 June Keynote address to Wollongong Diocesan Assembly, Wollongong

31 May Marist Brothers Project Roundtable, Sydney

18 May Address to Canberra-Goulburn Clergy Assembly, Canberra

- 17 May Address to Catholic Mission One Heart Many Voices Conference, Sydney
- 15 May Address to YPO WA chapter in Perth
- 5 April [TJHC meets with clergy in Brisbane and Catholic social services leaders in Sydney](#)
- 10 March [TJHC Speech - Where to from here?](#) - Catalyst for Renewal: Hunters Hill Sydney

## 2016

- 8 November [TJHC joins Notting Hill community at Spirituality in the Pub](#)
- 3 November [TJHC meets with community groups and others across Victoria](#)
- 3 November The Quality of Mercy presentation, Melbourne
- 2 November "Lookout" Monthly Meeting, Healesville
- 27 October Catholic Theological College SRC, Melbourne
- 25 October CSSA Leaders' Summit, CLC Melbourne
- 25 October Parish visit, St Roch's Parish Pastoral Council, Glen Iris
- 29 September [TJHC meets with Catholic community in Melbourne](#)
- 27 September Dominican Friars Pre-Chapter Assembly, Templestowe
- 28 September St Vincent De Paul social justice meeting
- 18 September Year of Mercy Panel Rosary Cultural Centre, Tamworth
- 20 September St Aloysius College staff development day
- 11 August [TJHC Chair addresses leaders of Catholic agencies in Perth](#)
- 11 August Archdiocese of Perth General Assembly presentation – Perth
- 18 August Presentation, Parish visit, Holy Name of Mary Parish Hunters Hill – Sydney
- 25 August Catholic Theological College Royal Commission seminar
- 26 July [TJHC in conversation with delegates from Rome](#)
- 23 July [St Vincent de Paul National Council Meeting Darwin](#)
- 19 July [Council addresses leading Catholic health provider](#)
- 5 July [TJHC briefs Capuchin Friars on issues emerging from Royal Commission](#)
- 29 June Parish visit, Mount Gambia Parish meeting
- 28 June CatholicCare Melbourne Staff Leadership Day
- 27 June Bendigo Spirituality in the Pub
- 22 June CRA National Conference Leura NSW
- 16 June [TJHC visits St Andrew's College in Cairns and meets with students and staff](#)
- 14 June Cairns Community meeting

- 2 June [Churches meet on redress in Australia](#)
- 2 June [TJHC in conversation with Sunbury community](#)
- 21 April [TJHC CEO talks at Newman College Council dinner about the challenges facing the Catholic Church](#)
- 12 April [In conversation with Baroness Sheila Hollins, Member of the Pontifical Council for the Protection of Minors](#)
- 10 March Parish visit, [Melbourne parishes gather to discuss Royal Commission and child sexual abuse](#)
- 16 February [TJHC in conversation with Victorian Catholic school principals](#)

## 2015

- 20 November [Catholic Church in consultation with other Churches](#)
- 21 October [TJHC CEO delivers wide-ranging speech on challenges for the Catholic Church as it faces the Royal Commission](#)
- 20 October [The Royal Commission and the unique challenges for the Catholic Church](#) Blackfriars Lecture Series - Australian Catholic University
- 20 October [Catholic Social Services Australia National Conference Canberra](#)
- 13 October [Sacred Heart College visit Melbourne](#)
- 11 June Parish visit, St Mary's Cathedral Parish Centre, Hobart
- 10 June Parish visit, [Council visits Stella Maris Parish on Sunshine Coast](#)
- 1 May Address Principals' Association of Victorian Catholic Secondary Schools, Essendon, Vic
- April Parish meeting, St Mark's Parish Hall, Drummoyne
- 1 April [Meeting with priests, educators and other senior Church people in Ararat](#)
- 14 April [TJHC addresses international gathering of priests](#)
- 4 February [TJHC meets with Discalced Carmelite Friars in south west Sydney](#)

## 2014

- 26 May [Principals and priests meet in Shepparton to talk child protection](#)
- 19 May [Queensland Catholic Education Commission meets with Child Protection Experts](#)
- 25 June [TJHC addresses CRA National Assembly](#)
- 3 July [Truth Justice and Healing Council briefs Clergy Life and Ministry on Royal Commission into Child Sex Abuse](#)
- 17 July [TJHC CEO hears from Catholic Social Services leaders in Victoria](#)
- 25 July Parish visit, [Council meets St Charles Borromeo Parishioners in Sydney](#)
- 15 September [Special service for child abuse survivors in Ballarat](#)

- 14 September [Rockhampton Diocesan Catholic Education Office student protection in-service](#)
- 21 October CSSA Leadership Forum - Discussion Panel
- 26 October Keynote Speaker -Tasmanian Catholic Schools – AGM, [Tasmanian Catholic Schools Parents Council acknowledge the importance of vigilance](#)
- 27 October Morning Tea - Opening of Blue Knot Day 2014 – ASCA
- 28 October [TJHC CEO visits Holy Family Church in Canberra](#)
- 31 October [TJHC meets with senior Catholic educators in Canberra Goulburn](#)
- 3 November Parish visit, [Council CEO visits Our Lady of the Rosary Parish in Brisbane](#)
- 7 November [TJHC meets with Bathurst diocesan leaders](#)
- 8 November Meeting with NCEC
- 13 November [TJHC CEO meets with national leaders in Catholic education](#)
- 17 November Parish visit, Our Lady of the Way Parish
- 18 November Parish visit, St Patrick's Sutherland Deanery
- 26 November Bishops and Leaders Meeting
- 9 December Parish visit, [Catholic Church's child sex abuse spokesperson meets with parishioners in Griffith NSW](#)
- 15 December Parish visit, [TJHC meets with Wollongong diocesan leaders and parishioners](#)

## 2013

- 1 May Parish visit, [TJHC CEO meets Townsville Bishop and other locals](#)
- 8 May [TJHC CEO addresses Catechist Directors about the Royal Commission](#)
- 17 June [TJHC CEO meets with Bishop of Bunbury and local priests in WA](#)
- 20 June [TJHC CEO's visits Church leaders in north-west Sydney](#)
- 22 June [TJHC CEO's Address to St Thomas More Forum Canberra, Media Release](#)
- 25 June [TJHC briefs CRA on Royal Commission into Sex Abuse](#)
- 3 July [TJHC briefs Clergy Life and Ministry on Royal Commission](#)
- 9 July [TJHC briefs leaders in Wagga Wagga](#)
- 5 August [TJHC CEO speaks at Brisbane Catholic Education leadership day](#)
- 8 August [TJHC visits Perth](#)
- 2 September [TJHC CEO visits Melbourne's St Kevin's Catholic school](#)
- 20 November [Ballarat Speech: Taking Responsibility](#)

## Appendix 5 - History and development of Church responses to child sexual abuse

### 1987 to 1993: The First Coordinated Response in Australia

#### **1988: Establishment of the Special Issues Committee**

As the incidence of child sexual abuse by clergy began to receive international attention in the 1980s the issue was canvassed at a meeting of the ACBC in late 1987, and then again 1988.

By November 1988 the ACBC had established the Special Issues Committee to, amongst other things, develop a protocol to be observed by bishops and major superiors if an allegation of criminal behaviour was made against a priest or religious.

#### **1989-90: The Initial Protocol**

In 1989, the Special Issues Committee developed the first draft of the Protocol for Dealing with Allegations of Criminal Behaviour (**the Initial Protocol**).

The Initial Protocol was the first official document adopted by the Church in Australia to provide assistance and guidance to those dealing with allegations of child sexual abuse.

While the Initial Protocol contained many worthwhile features, and although it represented at least a beginning, it did not go far enough. In particular it did not sufficiently address or prioritise the needs of victims; rather it was mainly directed to the disciplining of priests and religious.

The Initial Protocol did stress that any Church process must not interfere with any criminal justice process. It also envisaged that there would be canonical consequences for the accused, including the consideration of laicisation or dismissal from the religious institute.

#### **The 1992 Protocol**

The Special Issues Committee circulated draft amendments to the Initial Protocol in April 1991 in an attempt to improve the original protocol and to make it more victim-focused.

In 1992, an amended protocol was formally adopted which included changes addressing concerns that the Initial Protocol had not been sufficiently focused on the victim, and was overly concerned with the reputation of the Church.

The 1992 Protocol applied to all dioceses, orders and congregations across the country. At that time, such a degree of uniformity had not been achieved anywhere else in the world.

However, again from today's perspective, the 1992 Protocol did not represent the breakthrough that was needed. In particular its main focus continued to be the accused rather than the victim, its language and tone were still formal and official, and it gave considerable emphasis to a two-stage investigative process.

## Internal Training and Public Statements

Between 1991 and 1993, the Special Issues Committee worked on raising awareness of the Church's response to the issue of child sexual abuse including training for clergy and religious, presentations and in-service days around Australia.

On 19 December 1992, the ACBC and CRA issued *A Pastoral Statement on Child Protection and Child Sexual Abuse* which acknowledged Church authorities had denied or minimised the seriousness of child sexual abuse and had too readily accepted the promise by an offender that such behaviour would not be repeated.

In July 1993, the ACBC and CRA issued a further statement, titled *Sexual Offences and the Church*, acknowledging that harm that is caused by abuse and betrayal of trust can be serious and long lasting. It also affirmed the Church's commitment to give first consideration to victims of sexual abuse and their families.

## 1993 to 1996: The Development of *Towards Healing*

### Review of the 1992 Protocol

In July 1993, the ACBC authorised consultation about drafting a new set of policies and procedures to replace the 1992 Protocol.

At the same meeting, the ACBC also approved the release of a public statement, '*Sexual Offences and the Church*', in which they again pledged 'their support in working with others in the community to bring healing to those who have been hurt'.

### Development of the *Towards Healing* Response

In early November 1993 the Special Issues Committee created a draft document entitled 'The Catholic Church's Principles in Relation to Sexual Abuse and Professional Misconduct 4/11/93'.

In April 1994, the ACBC established the Bishops Committee for Professional Standards (**Bishops Committee**), which replaced the Special Issues Committee.

The 1993 document, which became *Towards Healing*, was intended to be a victim-centred response. The Bishops Committee deliberately sought to design a process specifically for victims, particularly those who were unwilling to approach the police or unable to seek redress through the police as the offender had died. This approach was quite revolutionary for the time, and was unique to the Catholic Church in Australia.

Initially two documents were drafted: a Statement of Principles in relation to sexual abuse by priests and religious, and a Revised Protocol for dealing with allegations of sexual abuse.

The tone and structure of the new protocol reflected a strong desire that it be an accessible document, which could readily be understood by both victims and accused.

While the 1992 Protocol had been a confidential document for internal use by the dioceses and religious orders, the new protocol was to be a public document. The rationale was a need for a document that clearly announced where the Church stood – that it would not tolerate any form of sexual abuse, and that it would cooperate with police and victims.

## 1996: Adoption and Release of *Towards Healing*

At the April 1996 ACBC meeting the Bishops Committee presented a complete draft of *Towards Healing* to the ACBC.

*Towards Healing* departed from the 1992 Protocol in several significant ways including opening with an apology, being victim orientated, being written in a style that was simple, clear and accessible, simplifying the process of receiving and responding to complaints including introducing special contact people to work with individual victims, encouraging victims to go to the police and providing for a facilitated meeting between a victim and the Church authority.

At the November 1996 plenary meeting, the ACBC approved *Towards Healing*, to come into operation on 31 March 1997. CRA had also approved the document in principle.

Additionally, the ACBC carried a motion replacing the Bishops Committee with the NCPS. The NCPS was established as a joint committee of the ACBC and CRA, and was to be funded equally by and to be equally responsible to both.

It was charged with general oversight and policy development of the professional standards in the Church.

### *The Melbourne Response*

In October 1996, the Archdiocese of Melbourne announced the establishment of a new initiative (which became known as The Melbourne Response) to respond to complaints of abuse committed by a priest of the Archdiocese or by any religious or lay person working within the Archdiocese.

The Melbourne Response has three separate components, which operate independently of the Archdiocese and of each other.

They are the Independent Commissioners, who are responsible for receiving and investigating complaints; the Compensation Panel which considers applications from victims for compensation, and makes recommendations to the Archdiocese in respect of the ex gratia payment that ought to be offered, having regard to the cap set by the Archdiocese; and Carelink which provides uncapped, ongoing professional support for needs arising in relation to the abuse.

As a part of The Melbourne Response, spiritual support and guidance is also available at the parish level.

### **Professional standards infrastructure**

In March 1997 the ACBC and CRA established the NCPS to develop professional standards policies in the Church and to assist with the implementation of *Towards Healing*.

*Towards Healing* was implemented locally. To that end state professional standards resource groups were established. State-based professional standards offices began to evolve from 1997.

As part of the *Towards Healing* implementation a network of contact persons, assessors, facilitators and reviewers was developed around the country and the Encompass treatment program was established.

The first review of *Towards Healing* took place in 1999 and by 2001 a revised version of *Towards Healing* was in operation.

In 1999 the *Integrity in Ministry* document, which outlined expectations of appropriate behavior for priests and religious, was developed. It was reviewed in 2001.



By 2003 a national assessment review panel had been established to be overseen by the NCPS.

By 2009 a second review of *Towards Healing* had been completed.

In 2011 *Integrity in the Service of the Church*, the standards protocol for lay employees and volunteers within the Church was developed by the NCPS.

Since the introduction of *Towards Healing* risk management, education and prevention seminars, child safety programs and improved protocols in schools have been implemented through professional standards offices and Catholic education offices around the country.

Local professional standards reference groups continued to advise Church leaders on changes to complaints handling procedures and pastoral responses to victims and survivors.

## Appendix 6 - Catholic Professional Standards 'Green Paper' Consultation Process

As part of the development of Catholic Professional Standards a 'green paper' policy position paper and consultation process was undertaken throughout the three years from early 2014. To follow is the time line listing key events and milestones leading up to the incorporation of CPS Limited in November 2016 and the appointment of the its inaugural board of directors.

### 2014

- |             |   |
|-------------|---|
| 10 February | Draft Position Paper <i>Reform Proposals for addressing child sexual abuse</i> considered at TJH Council Meeting  |
| 11 March    | <p>Draft Green Paper to Fr Tim Brennan, NCPS for consultation.</p> <p><i>Green Paper: Reform Proposals for Addressing Child Sexual Abuse</i></p> <p>Informal Working Group established</p>  |
| 14 March    | <p>Feedback from NCPS via Sr Denise Fox</p> <p><i>Green Paper: Ensuring a Safe Church for All</i></p> <p>Preface: This discussion paper drafted by the Council and the NCPS is the first step of a Supervisory Group-endorsed consultation process with bishops and religious leaders on reforms to work towards <i>Ensuring a Safe Church for All</i></p>  |
| 1 April     | Draft Green Paper to Supervisory Group  |
| 11 April    | <p>Draft approved by Archbishop Denis Hart, President ACBC</p> <p><i>Green Paper: Ensuring a Safe Church for Children</i> (dated 10 April 2014)</p>   |
| 11 April    | Draft distributed by Fr Brian Lucas, ACBC, and Sr Leone Whitmack, CRA, to all bishops and religious leaders in preparation for the joint meeting at Mary MacKillop Place 8 May 2014.  |
| 8 May       | Bishops and leaders meeting Mary MacKillop Place North Sydney   |
| 24 June     | <p>Green Paper considered by CRA National Assembly</p> <p>Decision to outsource consultation</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>■ Reference Group established</li> <li>■ Expression of Interest drafted</li> <li>■ SG to consider budget</li> <li>■ Council in consultation with SG to appoint consultant</li> <li>■ Council with reference group assistance to oversee the work of the consultant</li> </ul> |

- 25 November Green Paper (20 November 2014) Considered by Supervisory Group
- 8 December Green Paper (26 November 2014) distributed to bishops and religious leaders

## 2015

- 4 January Consultant Facilitator appointed – Gabrielle Trainor, NSW Governance advisor, LLB, MA, AICD Fellow.
- 28 January Background Paper (dated 27 January 2015 – including Green Paper dated 20 November 2014 as an appendix) distributed to bishops and leaders
- 9 February TJHC meeting Sydney
- 11 February Revised Green Paper (including Green Paper dated 26 November 2014) sent to all bishops and leaders.
- 18 February Revised Background Paper and Green Paper (27 January) distributed to all ACBC agencies

### Consultation Meetings

Consultation meetings were held to discuss the establishment of a new overarching Church body to set, audit and publicly report on measures that further ensure safety for children and vulnerable people in Church institutions on the following dates/locations:

- 2 March Canberra
- 3 March Adelaide
- 6 March Perth
- 13 March Hobart
- 18 March Sydney (am and pm)
- 23 March Brisbane
- 24 March Melbourne

### Subsequent process

- 7 April Draft report received from consultant
- 29 April Final report received from consultant: *Restoring Trust Together*
- May *Restoring Trust Together* to SG, ACBC and CRA
- November ACBC and CRA sign off on Catholic Professional Standards

## 2016

- 5 April Draft constitution approved by Supervisory Group
- Consideration of the transition of NCPS

9 May	CPS Constitution considered at joint meeting of ACBC and CRA with Trustees of PJPs Bishops voted CRA leaders and PJPs met
7 June	Supervisory Group considered list of possible directors for CPS, directed nominations committee to progress Draft communication strategy considered
24 June	CRA voted at National Assembly
2 August	Three potential directors agreed: Mr John Watkins AM, Ms Patricia Faulkner AO, the Hon Geoffrey Giudice AO. Mackinson D'Apice to proceed to set up the company. Four member representatives agreed, with the possibility of PJP rep by September. Public announcement discussed. Briefing meeting planned for three initial directors and members of Supervisory Group.
25 October	Briefing
22 November	CPS launched. Mr John Watkins AM, Ms Patricia Faulkner AO, the Hon Geoffrey Giudice AO appointed to the Board.

## 2017

17 July	Ms Sherree Limbrick commenced as the inaugural Chief Executive Officer of CPS Ltd.
29 August	CPS Ltd appointed two further directors, the Hon Michael Lavarch AO and Dr Robyn Miller to the Board.

## 2018

22 January	CPS Ltd appointed a further director, Dr Ruth Shean to the board.
29 January	CPS Ltd appointed a further director, Dr Kerrie Tuite to the board.
7 February	CPS Ltd announced its board was complete and it would release the first draft of its new standards, based extensively on the Royal Commission's findings on the <a href="#">Key elements of child-safe organisations</a> , in the coming months.

## Appendix 7 - Guidelines for Church authorities in responding to civil claims for child sexual abuse

### **GUIDELINES FOR CHURCH AUTHORITIES IN RESPONDING TO CIVIL CLAIMS FOR CHILD SEXUAL ABUSE**



#### **Background and purpose**

The community expects Church authorities to pursue a compassionate and consistent approach towards victims of child sexual abuse within their institutions.

These guidelines have been prepared by the Truth Justice and Healing Council and endorsed by the Supervisory Group to promote justice and consistency in the way Church authorities handle claims and conduct litigation in relation to child sexual abuse. The guidelines are similar to the models adopted by many governments in Australia. They apply to current and future cases.

Church authorities aim to be fair, reasonable and honest in their dealings with victims of child sexual abuse. Respect and dignity will be afforded to victims, their families and other third parties affected by the abuse. Every effort will be made to ensure victims feel safe and secure, both in the telling of their stories and in the pursuit of justice. The guidelines apply flexibly and respond to the circumstances of each claim. However, they are not intended to prevent Church authorities from acting properly to defend claims that they consider should be defended.

Church authorities recognise that they cannot remove the pain and suffering of victims of abuse but they will strive, through kindness, understanding and hope, to support victims emotionally, spiritually and financially in their rightful quest to live a full life.

The guidelines commence on 1 January 2016.

#### **Guidelines**

When dealing with civil claims related to child sexual abuse, Church authorities should at all times act honestly, fairly and compassionately by:

- (a) dealing with claims promptly and not causing unnecessary delay in the handling of claims and litigation
- (b) assisting the claimant to identify the correct defendant to respond to the legal proceedings
- (c) facilitating access to records relating to the claimant, subject to considering the privacy entitlements of third parties and documents that are legally professionally privileged
- (d) making an early assessment of:
  - (i) the Church authority's prospects of success in defending the proceedings, and
  - (ii) the Church authority's potential liability in the claim made against it
- (e) acting consistently in the handling of claims and litigation
- (f) mindful of the potential for litigation to be a traumatic experience for claimants who have suffered sexual abuse, endeavouring to avoid legal proceedings wherever possible or to confine the scope of the proceedings
- (g) paying legitimate claims without litigation

- (h) considering resolving matters without the need for a claimant to take the formal step of filing a statement of claim
- (i) providing information about services and supports available to claimants and considering requests from claimants for counselling, pastoral and psychological care assistance, and other kinds of acknowledgement or redress, including meetings with the Church leader, site visits, etc
- (j) offering, and participating fully and effectively in, alternative dispute resolution processes wherever possible
- (k) if it is not possible to avoid litigation, keeping the costs of litigation to a minimum, including by:
  - (i) not requiring the claimant to prove a matter which the Church authority knows to be true or has accepted as true
  - (ii) not contesting liability if the Church authority knows that the dispute is only about the amount of compensation
  - (iii) monitoring the progress of the litigation and using appropriate methods to resolve the litigation, including alternative dispute resolution, settlement offers and payments into court, and
  - (iv) ensuring that arrangements are made so that a person participating in any alternative dispute resolution process or settlement negotiations on behalf of the Church authority can enter into a settlement of the claim or legal proceedings in the course of the process or the negotiations
- (l) not taking advantage of a claimant who lacks the resources to litigate a legitimate claim
- (m) if a statutory limitation period is available as a defence, not relying on that defence unless:
  - (i) the claim involves other defendants that are not Church defendants and there is a risk that the Church authority might bear a disproportionate share of the whole liability to the claimant, or
  - (ii) the lapse of time has a burdensome effect on the Church authority that is so serious that the Church authority considers that a fair trial would not be possible
- (n) if there is a need for expert evidence, co-operating with claimants about choice of expert, to facilitate agreement on the use of a single expert if practicable
- (o) not undertaking and pursuing appeals unless the Church authority believes that it has reasonable prospects for success
- (p) apologising if the Church authority is aware that it or its representatives or lawyers have acted wrongfully, improperly or in breach of these guidelines.

### Consistent approaches

Any Church entity which has adopted guiding principles dealing with the same subject matters as the guidelines should ensure that there is no inconsistency between those guiding principles and the guidelines and should not act inconsistently with the guidelines.

November 2015



## Appendix 8 - Guidelines for responding to requests from survivors of child sexual abuse whose claims have been subject to settlements

### **GUIDELINES FOR RESPONDING TO REQUESTS FROM SURVIVORS OF CHILD SEXUAL ABUSE WHOSE CLAIMS HAVE BEEN SUBJECT TO SETTLEMENTS**



#### **Background**

The Catholic Church in Australia is deeply ashamed that some of its priests, religious and other personnel have sexually abused children. The Church acknowledges that many of those abused carry the impact throughout their lives and, as a result, require ongoing support and assistance. Some have had recourse to the Church's pastoral response programs, *Towards Healing* and the *Melbourne Response*, to obtain some measure of redress. Others have taken civil action to obtain redress.

However, several in both categories say that the redress provided to them has been insufficient having regard to the severity of the abuse they suffered and the effect it has had upon them. They have requested Church authorities to review the settlements arrived at in their cases.

#### **Purpose of the guidelines**

The guidelines set out below have been prepared by the Truth Justice and Healing Council (*the Council*) and endorsed by the Supervisory Group to assist dioceses and religious orders respond to any requests by individuals to review settlements previously made with them.

The guidelines do not cover cases where compensation has been paid under the *Melbourne Response*. The issue of how those cases should be reviewed is under consideration in the review of the *Melbourne Response* presently being undertaken by the Hon Donnell Ryan QC.

#### **Context in which the guidelines have been prepared**

In submissions to the Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse, the Church has, through the Council, publicly supported the establishment of an independent national redress scheme funded by both government and non-government institutions to deliver redress to survivors of child sexual abuse. The Council has recommended that the scheme make provision for the amount of any prior settlement to be set off against the amount of any redress which the applicant receives under the scheme.

However, it may be some years before any recommendation by the Royal Commission for the establishment of a redress scheme is implemented.

The Council recognises that the needs of some individuals who were abused are such that their requests for review of settlements require a more immediate response by Church authorities. The guidelines set out below are intended to assist that response.

#### **Guidelines**

- 1 A claimant who made a previous claim under *Towards Healing* that was not accepted should be directed to the relevant Professional Standards Office for the claim to be considered again under *Towards Healing*.

- 2 A previous claim under *Towards Healing* or at common law that was determined or settled, whether or not a deed of release was entered into, may be re-opened if:
  - (a) the Church authority considers that the process in which the determination was made or the settlement was reached was inadequate or unfair, whether because of the process followed at the assessment or determination stage or the lack of opportunity given to the claimant to obtain advice before the claim was determined or settled or for any other reason; or
  - (b) the Church authority considers that the amount or amounts paid to, or on behalf of, the claimant was not, or were not, fair and reasonable having regard to the severity of the abuse and its effects on the claimant.
- 3 Matters which the Church authority may take into account in making an assessment pursuant to guideline 2(b) include:
  - (a) the value of any support and assistance which, in addition to any lump sum payment or payments, the Church authority provided or funded for the claimant or members of his or her family; and
  - (b) the amount of any reasonable legal costs incurred by the claimant in pursuing the claim for which the claimant was not reimbursed.

*Note: Monetary amounts considered under these guidelines should be adjusted to their present-day value using the inflation calculator of the Reserve Bank of Australia at [www.rba.gov.au/calculator](http://www.rba.gov.au/calculator).*

### Exclusions

The guidelines are not intended to operate if the claimant's previous claim was determined by a court or if the settlement of the claim was approved by a court.

The guidelines are not intended to operate if the claimant's previous claim was dealt with under *Towards Healing* and the Church authority is satisfied that the claimant had available to him or her a relevant process for seeking review under that protocol but did not do so.<sup>1</sup>

### Insurance

In applying the guidelines, a Church authority should be aware that indemnity may not be available from its insurer to cover any further payment to a claimant and therefore the payment would be at the expense of the Church authority. The insurer is likely to take the view that, if there has been a prior settlement and a deed of release has been signed, the Church authority has no right to further indemnity.

November 2014

---

<sup>1</sup> A review of process, not subject to any time limitation, was available under *Towards Healing* 1996. A review of process, subject to a 3-month time limitation, was available under *Towards Healing* 2000. Since 2007, a review of process and findings, subject to a 3-month time limitation, has been available under *Towards Healing*.



## Appendix 9 - Royal Commission private session information overview

The following information has been extracted from Volume 5 of the Royal Commission's final report and (or) the opening statement by Senior Counsel Assisting the Royal Commission, in the final public hearing (Case Study 57) on 27 March 2017.

- By 31 December 2017 the Royal Commission's website reported that 8,013 private sessions had been held.
- People who attended a private session had the opportunity to tell Commissioners about their experience of child sexual abuse in institutional contexts. As well as speaking about their abuse, the institution, the perpetrator and the institutional response, private session attendees often described their experience of disclosure and the impacts of abuse.
- The Royal Commission considers it likely that there are very many people who have been sexually abused in institutional contexts as children, who have not attended a private session.

### Gender

- Of survivors who attended private sessions the majority, that is 64 per cent, were male. Thirty five per cent were female (0.3 per cent other/unknown). However, research and prevalence studies have shown that girls comprise a higher proportion of victims of child sexual abuse when considering non-institutional settings.
- More male survivors in private sessions described being victims of other children's harmful sexual behaviours than female survivors.
- The gender breakdown of survivors who attended private sessions varied depending on the management of the institution in which they told the Commissioners abuse occurred.
  - Of survivors who said they were abused in an institution managed by a government organisation, 55 per cent were male.
  - Of survivors who said they were abused in an institution managed by secular organisations, 66 per cent were male.
- 70 per cent of survivors reporting abuse in religious institutions in private sessions were male.
- The proportion of male and female survivors in private sessions varied according to the type of institution where the abuse was said to have taken place.
  - The Royal Commission heard from more female survivors than male who were sexually abused in childcare and health settings.
  - The Royal Commission heard from more male survivors than female who were sexually abused in places of worship, out-of-home care, social support services, juvenile justice and detention, educational, recreation, sports and clubs, armed forces and youth employment settings.

- The proportion of male and female survivors varied over time. 65 per cent of survivors who told the Royal Commission they were abused before 1990 were male – 35per cent were female. Of those survivors who reported abuse post 1990, 56per cent were male and 44per cent female.

## Victim age

- The most common age range of victims when they experienced the first episode of abuse was between ten and 14 years old. Forty six per cent of victims were in this age range.
- Twenty eight per cent were abused when they were between five and nine years.
- Ten per cent of survivors were abused when they were between the ages of 15 and 17 years.
- Five per cent of survivors were abused when they were under five years of age.
- Female victims tended to report that the abuse commenced at a younger age than male victims.

## Adult perpetrators

- The majority of perpetrators reported were adult males, that is nearly 94 per cent of survivors reported abuse by a male perpetrator. Just under eleven per cent reported abuse by female perpetrators. Seven per cent reported abuse by both male and female perpetrators.
- The people who were reported during private sessions as having sexually abused children had different ages, ethnicities and socio-economic status. Some were married or in relationships, while others were not.
- The Royal Commission heard that most adults who sexually abuse a child in an institutional context already have close contact with their victim prior to the abuse.
- The positions held by adult perpetrators within institutions most commonly reported were members of the clergy (32 per cent); teachers (21 per cent); and residential care workers (13 per cent).

## People who sexually abuse children

- During private sessions, the Royal Commission gathered a significant amount of information about the people who the Commissioners were told have sexually abused children in institutional contexts. This included information on both adult perpetrators and children with harmful sexual behaviours.
- Of all survivors who attended a private session, 16 per cent reported that another child had sexually abused them.
- In most cases reported to Commissioners in private sessions, the victims of children with harmful sexual behaviours were male, that is 62 per cent.
- Forty five per cent of survivors reported experiencing abuse by children with harmful sexual behaviours in a historical out-of-home care institution.

- Eighteen per cent reported the abuse occurring in educational settings, and eleven per cent reported the abuse in juvenile justice settings.

### Duration, frequency of abuse, and number of perpetrators

- Not all people who attended private sessions shared information about the duration of the abuse they experienced. Of those who did, 37 per cent reported episodes of abuse that lasted for longer than one year. Two per cent of survivors said they experienced abuse that lasted longer than 10 years.
- Just under 80 per cent of survivors reported multiple episodes of abuse.
- The majority of survivors, 78 per cent experienced abuse in a single institution.
- Sixteen per cent told the Commissioners that they were abused in two institutions, and
- six per cent said they were abused in three or more institutions.
- Most survivors told the Commissioners they experienced abuse by a single perpetrator, 64 per cent.
- Thirty six per cent of survivors told the Commissioners in private sessions that they had been abused by multiple perpetrators.

### Types of institutions

- The institution types most commonly reported to the Royal Commission were managed by religious organisations. These institutions accounted for 60 per cent of all reports by survivors in private sessions.
- Survivors reported over 1,500 institutions managed by religious organisations, which was equivalent to just over half, 53 per cent of all institutions named in private sessions.
- More than 2000, 37 per cent, of all private session attendees reported sexual abuse in a Catholic institution. The other denominations commonly reported by survivors were institutions managed by the Anglican Church, which was reported by 500 survivors in over 200 institutions, and the Salvation Army which was the subject of report by more than 250 survivors in approximately 50 institutions.
- Just over one third of survivors, that is 35 per cent reported during private sessions that they were abused in an institution under government management. The Commissioners were told about more than 900 government institutions, totalling 32 per cent of institutions named in private sessions.
- Ten per cent of survivors reported that they were abused in institutions under secular management. The Commissioners were told about more than 400 secular institutions, totalling 14 per cent of institutions.
- Institutions which were reported, provided a wide range of services or activities. In private sessions, survivors most commonly reported institutions that provided historical out-of-home care (39 per cent), education (32 per cent), and religious instruction or association with places of worship (15 per cent).

- Patterns of abuse in institutions have changed over time. Some institution types reported during private sessions are no longer a feature of children's lives in contemporary Australia. For example, orphanages, missions, children's homes, reformatories and industrial schools do not exist today.
- Children's engagement with other institution types has also changed across different periods. Children are now required to attend more years at school, more children are involved in sport and recreational activities, and the number of children in childcare has increased.

## Impacts

- When a child is sexually abused, the effects can be devastating.
  - For some, the impacts of the abuse, and an institution's response to it, last for their whole lives. For many survivors, the impacts of child sexual abuse are profound and interconnected.
  - They may be experienced at the same time or consecutively, as a cascade of effects over a lifetime.
  - Some impacts emerge later in life; others abate only to re-emerge or manifest in response to triggers or events.
  - Some people experience deep, complex trauma, which pervades all aspects of their life. Others do not perceive themselves to be profoundly harmed by the experience.
- Child sexual abuse can affect all aspects of a person's life, including how they develop as a child, adolescent and adult, and their ongoing mental, physical and emotional health.
- It can also profoundly affect interpersonal relationships, cultural identity, spirituality, and social and economic wellbeing. Although many of the impacts are similar, there may also be distinct additional impacts when a child is sexually abused in an institutional context.
- How an institution responds to child sexual abuse can also have a significant impact on a victim, and can compound the effects of abuse, increasing the feeling of betrayal.
- A poor institutional response can enable the abuse to continue, as well as contributing to re-traumatisation, fear and mistrust of institutions, isolation and ostracism. Conversely, appropriate responses can help victims move towards recovery and healing.
- Child sexual abuse affects the whole community. The effects ripple outwards, adversely affecting victims' parents, siblings, partners, carers and children, as well as other children and staff in institutions where the abuse occurred. The effects can be intergenerational, with multiple generations being affected by child sexual abuse.

## Appendix 10 - Analysis of claims of child sexual abuse made with respect to Catholic Church

Throughout 2016 a child sexual abuse claim data survey was carried out by the Royal Commission with the assistance of the Council and Church authorities.

The survey gathered information about the extent of claims of child sexual abuse made against Catholic Church personnel, including any current or former priest, religious brother or sister, or any other person employed in or appointed to a voluntary position by a Church authority.

The data collected included all 'claims' of child sexual abuse, including those that were ongoing, settled, discontinued, concluded without redress or not accepted by the authority.

The survey was confined to seeking information about 'claims' (as defined): that is where the claimant had notified a Church authority of their complaint and sought redress, or a complaint was accepted, although redress had not been sought.

The claims data sought information about claims received in the period 1980 to 2015.

The data was provided in raw form to the Royal Commission by the dioceses and orders within the Catholic Church. It was collated by the Royal Commission in conjunction with the Council and released during Case Study 50 in February 2017. It reveals:

### Claimants

- 4,445 people alleged incidents of child sexual abuse in 4,765 claims.
- The claims were made to 93 Catholic Church authorities and identified more than 1,049 separate institutions
- Where the gender of people making a claim was reported, 78 per cent were male and 22 per cent were female. Of those people who made claims of child sexual abuse received by religious orders with only religious brother members, 97 per cent were male.
- The average age of people who made claims of child sexual abuse, at the time of the alleged abuse, was 10.5 for girls and 11.6 for boys.
- The average time between the alleged abuse and the date a claim was made was 33 years.

### Perpetrators

- A total of 1,880 alleged perpetrators were identified in claims of child sexual abuse. Over 500 unknown people were identified as alleged perpetrators. It cannot be determined whether any of those people whose identities are unknown were identified by another claimant in a separate claim.
- Of the 1,880 identified alleged perpetrators:
  - 597 or 32 per cent were religious brothers

- 572 or 30 per cent were priests
  - 543 or 29 per cent were lay people
  - 96 or 5 per cent were religious sisters.
- Of all alleged perpetrators, 90 per cent were male and 10 per cent were female.
- Of priests from the 75 Catholic Church authorities with priest members surveyed, who ministered in Australia between 1950 and 2010, 7.9 per cent of diocesan priests were alleged perpetrators and 5.7 per cent of religious priests were alleged perpetrators. Overall, 7 per cent of priests were alleged perpetrators.

### Institution type identified

- The most common institution type identified in claims were schools in which 46 per cent of claims were identified.
- Children's orphanages or residential facilities were identified in 29 per cent of all claims.

### Time period of claims

- The vast majority of claims alleged abuse that started in the period 1950 to 1989 inclusive.
- The largest proportion of first alleged incidents of child sexual abuse, 29 per cent, occurred in the 1970s.
- the average time between the alleged abuse and the date a claim was made was 33 years.
- The earliest incidence of alleged abuse reported in a claim to a Catholic Church authority was in the 1920s and the latest was after 2010.

### Religious congregations and dioceses

- The Christian Brothers, the De La Salle Brothers, the Marist Brothers, the Patrician Brothers and the St John of God Brothers, each of which has only religious brother members, made up 5 per cent of all of Church authorities which received any claims.
- However, of all the claims which were made to authorities, 41 per cent were received by these five male orders.
- Archdioceses and dioceses made up 33 per cent of all Church authorities which received claims. Of all the claims which were made to Church authorities, archdioceses and dioceses received 37 per cent.
- Female religious institutes with religious sister members made up 28 per cent of Church authorities that received any claims of child sexual abuse, and yet of all the claims which were made to Church authorities, they received only 9 per cent.


- The highest number of claims of child sexual abuse concerned a residential care facility operated by the De La Salle Brothers in Beaudesert in Queensland. There were 219 claims relating to alleged child sexual abuse at this institution.

## Payments

- Overall, 3,066 claims of child sexual abuse resulted in a payment being made following a claim for redress; 2,854 of these claims resulted in monetary compensation.
- A significant number of claims were ongoing at the time of the survey.
- Overall, Church authorities paid \$276.1 million in response to claims of child sexual abuse received between 1 January 1980 and 28 February 2015.
- That sum included amounts for compensation, treatment, legal and other costs. Of the total amount, \$258.8 million was monetary compensation, at an average of about \$91,000 per claim.
- The Christian Brothers, who at the relevant time operated a number of residential facilities, reported the highest number of payments. This order of Brothers made 763 payments amounting to \$48.5 million, with an average payment of about \$64,000.
- Of those Church authorities that made at least 10 payments, the Jesuits reported the highest average payment, at about \$257,000 per payment.
- The most commonly used redress process was *Towards Healing*, with 40 per cent of claims going through this scheme. Of all redress processes, *The Melbourne Response* had the highest proportion of claims resulting in monetary compensation: 324 claims, or 84 per cent of all Melbourne Response claims, resulted in monetary compensation.
- Of all the redress processes used by claimants, the highest amount of monetary compensation paid was through civil proceedings, at \$96.6 million.
- Other redress processes, which might include a direct approach by a claimant or their solicitor to a Church authority, resulted in monetary compensation payments of \$93.1 million.
- The highest average monetary compensation paid was about \$151,000 per complainant and was through civil proceedings

## Appendix 11 - Case Study 50: sample requests showing the range of issues covered

### Sample general statement request issued to Church authorities



**Royal Commission**  
into Institutional Responses  
to Child Sexual Abuse

8 July 2016

Ms Kate Harrison  
Gilbert + Tobin  
L35, Tower Two, International Towers Sydney  
200 Barangaroo Avenue  
Barangaroo NSW NSW 2000

By email: [kharrison@gtlaw.com.au](mailto:kharrison@gtlaw.com.au)

Dear Ms Harrison

**Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse (Royal Commission)**  
**Final Hearing regarding the institutional response to child sexual abuse in the Catholic Church**

The Royal Commission will hold a final hearing regarding the institutional response of the Catholic Church in Australia to child sexual abuse, which will take place during February 2017.

The hearing will examine various aspects of the response of Catholic Church authorities to child sexual abuse including:

1. Data regarding the extent of child sexual abuse within Catholic institutions.
2. Factors that may have contributed to the occurrence of child sexual abuse in Catholic institutions, particularly by clergy and religious.
3. Factors that may have affected the institutional response of the Catholic Church to child sexual abuse.
4. The response of Catholic Church authorities to the findings and observations made in relevant Royal Commission case study reports.
5. Current and future approaches of the Catholic Church authorities to responding to child sexual abuse and preventing child sexual abuse.

These topics are not fixed, and there may be additional matters that the Royal Commission considers at the hearing.

**Request for statement –**

The Royal Commission requests a statement from \_\_\_\_\_ addressing the matters set out below. Please note that the Royal Commission may make further requests for a statement or other contribution from \_\_\_\_\_ as its preparation for the hearing progresses.

GPO Box 5283 Sydney NSW 2001 Australia T 1800 099 340 W [childabuseroyalcommission.gov.au](http://childabuseroyalcommission.gov.au)



***Reforms undertaken since the commencement of the Royal Commission***

1. Please indicate whether your Catholic Church authority has undertaken any reforms since the commencement of the Royal Commission. If so, please describe:
  - a. the scope of these reforms
  - b. why they were considered necessary
  - c. how the reforms enhance the effectiveness of child protection policies and responses to claims, complaints or concerns of child sexual abuse
  - d. how the reforms alleviate the impact of past, or will alleviate the impact of future, child sexual abuse
  - e. any impediments to implementing reforms (if so, describe the impediments and how your Catholic Church authority proposes to overcome them).
2. Please indicate whether your Catholic Church authority has reassessed any finalised claims for redress (including where complaints or claims have been denied) in relation to child sexual abuse since the commencement of the Royal Commission, and if so, what policy, procedure or principle guided that reassessment.

***Response to Royal Commission Case Study***

3. Identify what action, if any, your Catholic Church authority has taken in response to the publication of the Royal Commission Report of Case Study

***Towards Healing***

4. Please indicate whether your Catholic Church authority applies Towards Healing in whole or in part. If your Catholic Church authority does not apply Towards Healing in whole, please indicate which clauses it does not apply and why. Please do not provide a copy of Towards Healing.

***Policies and procedures***

Please identify (including each specific section), and where necessary explain, the policies and procedures which apply to your Catholic Church authority in relation to the matters below. Please include information about the policies and procedures that operate in any educational institutions that are part of your Catholic Church authority.

5. What policies and procedures your Catholic Church authority applies in relation to the response to complaints of child sexual abuse received by it.
6. What policies and procedures your Catholic Church authority applies in response to:
  - a. claims in relation to child sexual abuse made under an established redress process
  - b. civil litigation in relation to child sexual abuse.
7. What policies and procedures your Catholic Church authority applies in relation to the prevention of child sexual abuse, including in relation to the supervision of or access to children by Catholic Church personnel.
8. What policies and procedures your Catholic Church authority applies in relation to the management of its members or personnel who are the subject of a complaint of child sexual abuse, including:
  - a. referral to the police

- b. referral to counselling or therapy
  - c. supervised or restricted ministry
  - d. the provision of information about any complaints or allegations of child sexual abuse to any institution to which the member is transferring
  - e. the approach to or management of any member:
    - i. who has been convicted of child sexual abuse
    - ii. against whom an allegation of child sexual abuse has been otherwise substantiated
    - iii. who has admitted to a complaint of child sexual abuse
  - f. any action taken under canon law, including:
    - i. to remove or restrict the ministry of any member
    - ii. referral or application by a local ordinary to the Vatican to remove or restrict the ministry of any member
  - g. the provision of information about any complaints or allegations of child sexual abuse against a member of your Catholic Church authority to the NSW Ombudsman under the 'reportable conduct' scheme of the *Ombudsman Act 1974* (NSW).
9. Please identify which of the above policies and procedures are in writing, and where those documents can be accessed (including whether they are publicly available). For any policies and procedures not in writing, please explain how those policies and procedures are identified and applied.

***Selection, screening, training and formation of clergy and religious***

In relation to the selection, screening, training and formation of clergy and religious for your Catholic Church authority, please explain:

- 10. The current process for the selection of candidates for your Catholic Church authority, including recruitment, screening and evaluation to decide whether candidates are appropriate for formation. Please also identify the role of working with children checks in this process.
- 11. The current process for the selection and screening of seminarians, clergy or religious from overseas to serve in local dioceses or religious orders. Please indicate whether any information is sought from overseas authorities about whether those seminarians, clergy or religious have been the subject of complaints of child sexual abuse.
- 12. Whether, and if so how, the formation and training programs (both initial and ongoing) that operate in your Catholic Church authority include education or training relating to:
  - a. child protection and child sexual abuse
  - b. matters of sexuality including the vow of celibacy and formation for a celibate life.

***Support for and supervision of working clergy and religious***

- 13. Please describe how clergy or religious are supported and supervised in your Catholic Church authority including:
  - a. assistance for clergy or religious with psycho-sexual or substance abuse problems
  - b. assistance in coping with loneliness and isolation
  - c. regular performance review

- d. day-to-day supervision and oversight.

***Research, international reporting and inquiries***

Please indicate, and where appropriate, explain:

14. Whether your Catholic Church authority has conducted any independent or internal inquiries or reviews relating to the response to child sexual abuse or the causes of child sexual abuse, and the outcome of such inquiry or review.
15. Whether and to what extent your Catholic Church authority reports to international Catholic Church bodies or authorities on your authority's response to child sexual abuse. Please provide copies of any Quinquennial reports or any other reports of this nature.
16. Where applicable, whether the international body of your Catholic Church authority has conducted any research relating to child sexual abuse that has been provided to the Catholic Church authority in Australia.

Please provide copies of any documents which record the matters referred to above, except:

- a. where we have specifically requested that you do not provide a document
- b. where the documents have been previously provided to the Royal Commission, in which case, please provide the relevant document IDs.

The Royal Commission requires this statement to be finalised and signed by no later than **5 August 2016**. At such time, the Royal Commission will issue a notice for its production. The Royal Commission may later summons to give evidence in the public hearing.

Should you wish to discuss any aspect of this request, please contact

Yours sincerely

Solicitor Assisting

## Sample education statement request issued to Church authorities



**Royal Commission**  
into Institutional Responses  
to Child Sexual Abuse

20 September 2016

Mr Francis Sullivan  
Chief Executive Officer  
Truth Justice and Healing Council  
PO Box 4593  
Kingston ACT 2604  
By email: [francis.sullivan@tjhcouncil.org.au](mailto:francis.sullivan@tjhcouncil.org.au)

Dear Mr Sullivan

**Final hearing regarding the institutional response to child sexual abuse in the Catholic Church  
Requests for statements - Catholic education system**

As you are aware, the Royal Commission will hold a final hearing regarding the institutional response of the Catholic Church in Australia to child sexual abuse, which will take place during February 2017.

In July and August 2016, the Royal Commission requested statements from the leaders of a number of Catholic religious congregations addressing various matters that might be considered at the hearing. A list of the leaders of the religious congregations from whom statements were sought, and the date on which those statements were sought, is appended to this letter.

In those requests, the Royal Commission noted that it might make further requests for a statement or other contributions from those leaders of religious congregations as its preparation for the hearing progresses.

As part of its consideration of the current and future approaches of Catholic Church authorities to responding to child sexual abuse and preventing child sexual abuse, it is anticipated that the Royal Commission will examine the Catholic education system.

In respect of those leaders of Catholic religious congregations identified below from which it has sought statements, the Royal Commission now requests that as part of those statements those leaders of congregation address the following additional questions in relation to the operation of the Catholic education system within Australia under their congregational authority.

***School governance and employment arrangements***

1. Describe the role and responsibilities of the following individuals or bodies for the governance of Catholic schools that fall within your congregational education authority, specifically:
  - a. the role of the Archbishop or Bishop of a diocese within which a school falls
  - b. the role of your congregational leader
  - c. the role of the relevant Catholic Education Office or Catholic Schools Office
  - d. the role of the leader of your congregational education authority.



2. Describe the approach of your congregational education authority to the employment of both principals and teachers, specifically:
  - a. who, or what body, is responsible for employing principals
  - b. who, or what body, is responsible for employing deputy principals
  - c. who, or what body, employs staff, including teachers, in Catholic schools
  - d. the role of working with children checks in employing staff and in their ongoing employment.

***Lines of reporting between schools and Catholic education authorities***

3. Describe the requirements of the leader of your congregational education authority to report complaints of child sexual abuse to Catholic Church authorities, including to your congregational leader, including whether:
  - a. such reports are made in writing
  - b. the requirement is set out in a document (if so, please provide a copy).
4. Describe the requirements of principals of Catholic schools that fall within your congregational education authority to report complaints of child sexual abuse to the leader of your congregational education authority, including whether:
  - a. such reports are made in writing
  - b. the requirement is set out in a document (if so, please provide a copy).

***Investigation of complaints of child sexual abuse***

5. Outline which body has responsibility for the investigation of complaints of child sexual abuse in your schools. Specifically:
  - a. whether complaints are investigated within your congregational education authority
  - b. whether complaints are investigated by another body, for example the diocesan professional standards office.
6. Provide information about the operation of the relevant investigation body, including:
  - a. the number, qualifications, skills and training of staff employed in this body
  - b. any policies or procedures that govern the conduct of an investigation.

***The participation of children in the sacrament of Reconciliation***

7. Provide information about the participation of children in the sacrament of Reconciliation within schools that fall within your congregational education authority, including:
  - a. whether any policies or protocols govern the participation of children in Reconciliation and, if so, whether they are set out in a document (if so, please provide a copy)
  - b. whether participation in Reconciliation is voluntary or compulsory
  - c. whether permission is sought from parents or guardians before children participate in Reconciliation
  - d. where policies or protocols apply to the participation of children in Reconciliation, what requirements or guidelines apply to children attending individual Reconciliation with priests, including any guidelines about the location of Reconciliation or the supervision of Reconciliation by teachers or other school staff
  - e. whether priests conducting Reconciliation with children are required to undergo a working with children check.

The Royal Commission requests this statement to be finalised and signed by no later than **25 October 2016**. At such time, the Royal Commission will issue a notice for its production.

Should you wish to discuss any aspect of this request, please contact \_\_\_\_\_

Yours sincerely

Solicitor Assisting  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

## Sample seminary training statement request issued to rectors & directors of formation



Royal Commission  
into Institutional Responses  
to Child Sexual Abuse

8 September 2016

C/- Truth Justice and Healing Council  
PO Box 4593  
Kingston ACT 2604

Dear Father

### **Request for information – selection, screening, training and ongoing formation of priests**

The Royal Commission will hold a final hearing regarding the institutional response of the Catholic Church in Australia to child sexual abuse, which will take place during February 2017.

The hearing will examine various aspects of the response of Catholic Church authorities to child sexual abuse including:

1. Data regarding the extent of child sexual abuse within Catholic institutions.
2. Factors that may have contributed to the occurrence of child sexual abuse in Catholic institutions, particularly by clergy and religious.
3. Factors that may have affected the institutional response of the Catholic Church to child sexual abuse.
4. The response of Catholic Church authorities to the findings and observations made in relevant Royal Commission case study reports.
5. Current and future approaches of the Catholic Church authorities to responding to child sexual abuse and preventing child sexual abuse.

These topics are not fixed, and there may be additional matters that the Royal Commission considers at the hearing.

As part of its examination of factors that may have contributed to the occurrence of child sexual abuse in Catholic institutions and the institutional response of the Catholic Church to child sexual abuse, the Royal Commission may examine the selection, screening and training of priests and religious.

To assist in its investigations of those issues, the Royal Commission requests that you, as Rector of \_\_\_\_\_, provide it with the following information and documents in relation to \_\_\_\_\_

Please note that the Royal Commission may make further requests for information or other contributions from you, in your capacity as Rector of \_\_\_\_\_ as its preparation for the hearing progresses.

GPO Box 5283 Sydney NSW 2001 Australia T 1800 099 340 W [childabuseroyalcommission.gov.au](http://childabuseroyalcommission.gov.au)

***Catholic Church authorities served, seminarians and staff members***

1. Please indicate from which Catholic Church authorities (the Seminary) receives seminarians.
2. In relation to seminarians currently studying at the Seminary, please indicate:
  - a. their total number
  - b. the current age and current year in the seminary of each
  - c. the number, if any, who have been recruited from overseas, the countries from which they were recruited, and whether they are permanent residents or in Australia on a temporary visa
  - d. whether it is a requirement that seminarians have completed a tertiary qualification prior to admission to the Seminary
  - e. whether it is a requirement that seminarians undergo a working with children check or any other background checks:
    - i. prior to admission to the Seminary
    - ii. at any other stage of their formation at the Seminary or prior to ordination.
3. In relation to the current Seminary staff, please indicate:
  - a. the total number of staff engaged in formation
  - b. the total number of female staff engaged in formation
  - c. the roles of staff engaged in formation
  - d. the qualifications of staff engaged in formation
  - e. whether it is a requirement that staff undergo a working with children check or any other background checks:
    - i. prior to commencing work at the Seminary
    - ii. at any other time while working at the Seminary.
4. Please indicate whether and how the staff of the Seminary engaged in formation are trained (both in terms of specific vocational or tertiary qualifications and in-service training) in relation to the following areas:
  - a. child protection and allegations of child sexual abuse, including:
    - i. professional standards, policies and protocols, including legal obligations, relevant to child sexual abuse
    - ii. prevention of and responding to child sexual abuse
    - iii. causes and impacts of child sexual abuse
  - b. psychology, human sexuality, and/or psychosexual development
  - c. psychopathology, including sexual abuse
  - d. guiding formation for a celibate life.

Please identify when that training was undertaken and who that training was provided by.



***Recruitment, selection, screening and admission of candidates to the Seminary***

5. Please outline the Seminary's current policies and procedures in relation to the recruitment, selection and admission of seminarians to the Seminary. In relation to those policies and procedures, please indicate:
  - a. the role of the Bishop, Provincial, or head of the Catholic Church authorities from which the Seminary receives seminarians, or their delegates
  - b. the role of staff of the Seminary
  - c. the role of any external professional advisors
  - d. the role of any other external evaluators, including members of the wider Church community
  - e. what consideration, if any, is given to any previous seminary experience, previous seminary records, or previous experience in religious life.
6. Please indicate whether seminarians undergo psychological testing and assessment and/or psychosexual testing and assessment ('psychological screening' and 'psychosexual screening'). If so, please explain the following:
  - a. at what stage(s) a seminarian undergoes psychological or psychosexual screening between their first application for admission to the Seminary and their ordination to the priesthood
  - b. whether the psychological or psychosexual screening is mandatory
  - c. whether the psychological or psychosexual screening is subject to any confidentiality provisions or other conditions
  - d. who conducts the psychological or psychosexual screening, and their qualifications
  - e. the nature of the psychological or psychosexual screening, including what testing or assessment protocol(s) are used (eg MMPI-2)
  - f. whether any psychological or psychosexual screening is conducted specifically in relation to:
    - i. past sexual and relationship histories, including use of pornography and any past history of having been sexually abused
    - ii. psychopathology or personality disorders
    - iii. psychosexual maturity
    - iv. sexual dysfunction
    - v. capacity to maintain a celibate life.
7. If seminarians do undergo psychological or psychosexual screening, please explain:
  - a. how the results of the screening are used, including whether and how they are used in relation to the determination or discernment of the suitability and / or eligibility of a candidate for each of:
    - i. admission to the Seminary
    - ii. continuing formation at the Seminary

iii. ordination to the priesthood

- b. in relation to the matters at paragraph 7(a)(i) to (iii), please explain what weight is placed on psychological or psychosexual screening results and what other relevant factors would or might be considered
- c. in relation to the matters at paragraph 7(a)(i) to (iii), please explain who are the relevant decision-makers and what role(s) they play.

**Formation program**

- 8. Please give details about the structure, extent and format of the Seminary's current formal curriculum (i.e. formal units of study) in relation to the following areas:
  - a. human formation, including sexuality and psychosexual development
  - b. the vow of celibacy and preparation for and maintenance of a celibate life
  - c. professional standards and / or policies and protocols, including legal obligations, applying to child sexual abuse
  - d. prevention of and responding to child sexual abuse.
- 9. Please give details about whether and, if so, how and to what extent, any of the topics listed at paragraph 8 above are the subject of formation at the Seminary other than in the Seminary's current formal curriculum – for example, occasional talks, seminars, workshops, or private or individual formation, including by a spiritual director or pastoral supervisor.
- 10. Please indicate whether the Seminary has policies or procedures for referring seminarians to relevant specialists for counselling, treatment or other assistance if specific concerns arise beyond the expertise of seminary staff, any spiritual director, or any pastoral supervisor (whether on the Seminary staff or external).
- 11. As part of their formation at the Seminary, are seminarians encouraged or required to undertake Clinical Pastoral Education and/or to engage in any form of regular reflective consultation with a professional pastoral supervisor?
- 12. Are seminary staff engaged in formation required or encouraged to engage in any form of regular reflective consultation with a professional pastoral supervisor?

**Acceptance for ordination**

- 13. Please outline the Seminary's current policies and procedures for the evaluation and recommendation of seminarians for ordination to the priesthood. In relation to those policies and procedures, please indicate:
  - a. the role of the Bishop, Provincial, or head of the Catholic Church authorities from which the Seminary receives vocational candidates, or their delegates
  - b. the role of staff of the Seminary, including:
    - i. the seminary formator(s)
    - ii. any spiritual director
  - c. the role of any pastoral supervisor (whether on the Seminary staff or external)
  - d. the role of any external evaluators, including members of the wider Church community.

Where the matters above are recorded in documents (including policies, procedures, and Seminary curricula, catalogues or programs), please provide copies of those documents, except where the documents have been previously provided to the Royal Commission, in which case, please provide

the relevant document IDs. For any matters above the subject of policies and procedures not in writing, please explain how those policies and procedures are identified and applied.

Please provide the information and documents requested by **21 October 2016**.

Should you wish to discuss any aspect of this request, please contact

Yours sincerely

Solicitor Assisting

## Appendix 12 - Case Study 50: Church authorities and seminary rectors who provided statements in response to the Royal Commission's inquiries for final Catholic Church hearing

Bishop Gerard Hanna (now former) Bishop of Wagga Wagga

Sr Berneice Loch, (now former) Institute Leader, ISMAPNG

Archbishop Timothy Costelloe, Archbishop of Perth

Fr Gregory Chambers, Provincial Leader, Salesians of Don Bosco

Archbishop Julian Porteous, Archbishop of Hobart

Archbishop Mark Coleridge, Archbishop of Brisbane

Bishop Daniel Hurley, Bishop of Darwin

Br Peter Carroll, Provincial, Marist Brothers Province of Australia

Br Timothy Graham, Provincial, Oceania Province, Hospitaller Order of St John of God

Br Peter Clinch, Provincial, Christian Brothers Oceania Province

Bishop Paul Bird, Bishop of Ballarat

Fr Gregory Brett, Provincial, Vincentians Oceania Province

Br Ambrose Payne, obo Br David Hawke, Provincial, De La Salle ANZPPNG District

Bishop Michael Kennedy, Bishop of Armidale

Fr Kevin Saunders, Provincial, Dominican Province of the Assumption

Bishop Christopher Saunders, Bishop of Broome

Archbishop Christopher Prowse, Archbishop of Canberra and Goulburn

Bishop Antoine-Charbel Tarabay, Bishop of the Maronite Diocese of Australia

Monsignor Victor Martinez, Regional Vicar, Opus Dei

Bishop Michael McCarthy, Bishop of Rockhampton

Bishop Geoffrey Jarratt, (now former) Bishop of Lismore

Bishop Robert McGuckin, Bishop of Toowoomba

Archbishop Philip Wilson, Archbishop of Adelaide

Bishop Leslie Tomlinson, Bishop of Sandhurst

Bishop Michael McKenna, Bishop of Bathurst

Bishop Patrick O'Regan, Bishop of Sale

Fr Michael Lowcock (now former) Administrator of the Diocese of Townsville

Archbishop Anthony Fisher, Archbishop of Sydney

Bishop Columba Macbeth-Green, Bishop of Wilcannia-Forbes

Bishop Peter Ingham, Bishop of Wollongong

Bishop William Wright, Bishop of Maitland-Newcastle

Archbishop Denis Hart, Archbishop of Melbourne

Bishop James Foley, Bishop of Cairns

Bishop Vincent Long Van Nguyen, Bishop of Parramatta

Fr Brian McCoy, Provincial, Society of Jesus Australia

Fr Daniel Meagher, Rector, Seminary of the Good Shepherd, Sydney

Fr Peter Thompson, Rector, Vianney College, Wagga Wagga

Fr John Grace, Rector, Holy Spirit Seminary, Brisbane

Fr Brendan Lane, (now former) Rector, Corpus Christi College, Melbourne

Fr Eric Skruzny, Rector, Redemptoris Mater Seminary, Sydney

Fr John Hogan, Rector, Holy Spirit Seminary, Parramatta

Fr Brendan Kelly, Director of Jesuit Formation, Society of Jesus Australia

## Appendix 13 - Case Study 50 Summaries of panel contributions

The public hearing inquired into the current policies and procedures of Catholic Church authorities in Australia in relation to child protection and child-safe standards, including responding to allegations of child sexual abuse.

The scope and purpose of the public hearing was to inquire into:

- The current policies and procedures of Catholic Church authorities in Australia in relation to child protection and child-safe standards, including responding to allegations of child sexual abuse.
- Factors that may have contributed to the occurrence of child sexual abuse at Catholic Church institutions in Australia.
- Factors that may have affected the institutional response of Catholic Church authorities in Australia to child sexual abuse.
- The responses of Catholic Church authorities in Australia to relevant case study report(s) and other Royal Commission reports.
- Data relating to the extent of claims of child sexual abuse in the Catholic Church of Australia.
- Any related matters.

Day 1, 6 February 2017

Panel 1.1 - Structure, governance and culture

### Witnesses

- Dr David Ranson, Vicar General, Diocese of Broken Bay  
Parish priest Wahroonga
- Dr Michael Whelan SM, Director, Aquinas Academy  
Parish Priest St Patrick's Church Hill, Sydney

### Issues raised

- Opening Statement: Gail Furness SC
- Statement: Francis Sullivan, CEO, Truth Justice and Healing Council
- Compulsory celibacy misguided, shorter initial terms of formation needed, followed by much more developed structures of ongoing formation
- Limited role of women in the Church
- Need for independent, professional supervision of priests and bishops

Day 2, 7 February 2017

Session 2.1 – Fr Thomas Doyle OP

### Witness

- Fr Thomas P Doyle OP, United States canon lawyer, author, expert witness and consultant in areas of sexual abuse by clergy and religious

### Issues raised

- Clerical culture, secrecy, protection of perpetrators and institutional Church, evaded accountability and responsibility, moved paedophile priests and blamed victims
- Difficulty communicating the gravity of the issue of child sexual abuse to Church hierarchy
- Failure of Church to comprehend profound spiritual damage done to victims, their family and the community
- Impact of mandatory celibacy on the personal development of priests and religious and possible links to the sexual abuse of children.

## Panel 2.2 - Structure, governance and culture

### Witnesses

- Professor Francis Moloney SDB AM, Senior Professorial Fellow, Catholic Theological College, University of Divinity, Victoria
- Professor Neil Ormerod, Professor of Theology, Australian Catholic University, Faculty of Theology and Philosophy
- Dr Michelle Mulvihill, Managing Director and Principal Consultant, Corpsych Australia

### Issues raised

- Increased prevalence of abuse in male religious orders with access to vulnerable children
- Interaction of vulnerability, power and domination
- Pastoral supervision needed in line with other professions
- Professor Ormerod referred to the Archdiocese of Adelaide, specifically its low number of claims. He noted the decision of the former archbishop of Adelaide, Leonard Faulkner to forego an auxiliary bishop in favour of setting up a pastoral team which included a number of lay and religious women. He suggested that this model was a reason for the low number of claims.
- Professor Maloney noted a regression since changes following Vatican II to a more conservative approach.
- Dr Mulvihill called for mandatory registration of active priests, in line with other professional practices in Australia.

- Professor Ormerod warned against a culture of impotence, where change is mandated, but not implemented.
- Professor Moloney discussed the complexities arising from a multicultural priesthood.

Day 3, 8 February 2017

Panel 3.1 - Structure, governance and culture

### Witnesses

- Dr Maureen Cleary OAM, Governance and Management Consultant
- Professor Patrick Parkinson AM, Professor of Law, University of Sydney
- Mr Peter Johnstone OAM, President, Catholics for Renewal
- Archbishop Mark Coleridge, Archbishop of Brisbane  
Member, Supervisory Group, Truth Justice and Healing Council

### Issues raised

- Accountability and transparency
- Institutional Church has a lot to learn from women religious institutes which have run a majority of Church-based services
- Clergy very deficient in updating knowledge and formation
- Noted former Adelaide Archbishop Faulkner's successful efforts to share his executive power with lay and religious women, noting that in the clerical Church good things happen because of the presence of good people who are not trapped by clericalism.
- Professional standards office must be realistically funded and resourced.
- Church structures limit Church's capacity to respond to child sexual abuse.
- Impact of compulsory celibacy, emotional and geographic isolation, on incidence of child sexual abuse.
- Need to engage laity in organisation and spiritual running of the Church.
- Church governance dysfunctional, fails principles of good governance including accountability, transparency, leadership, listening and aligning the leadership of the organisation with its mission.
- Lack of accountability for bishops' decision-making processes
- Cultural change requires leadership change
- 2020 Synod should be preceded by smaller synods to hear the voice of the people
- Cultural change is difficult



- Pope Francis and RC catalysts for cultural change. Won't be business as usual following the Royal Commission.
- Archbishop Coleridge noted there is evidence of lingering culture that bishops are a law unto themselves.
- Archbishop Coleridge described efforts to introduce accountability measures for clergy.

### Session 3.2 – Dr Gerry O'Hanlon SJ

#### Witness

- Dr Gerry O'Hanlon SJ, Adjunct Associate Professor of Theology, Loyola Institute, Trinity College Dublin, Ireland (AVL from Dublin - 6.00pm AEDT 8 February)

#### Issues raised

- Dr O'Hanlon SJ gave evidence about some of the factors he considered had given rise to the child sexual abuse crisis in Ireland including the elevated status of the clergy, the passive role of children and the fact sociologists and psychologists had taken time to come to understand the phenomenon
- While he thought the Church should look at mandatory celibacy for other reasons, he was not sure it was a factor in the child sex abuse crisis

### Day 4, Thursday 9 February

#### Panel 4.1 - Church discipline and secrecy

#### Witnesses

- Father Thomas Doyle OP United States canon lawyer, author, expert witness and consultant in areas of sexual abuse by clergy and religious
- Mr Kieran Tapsell, published in the area of canon law
- Dr Rodger Austin, canon lawyer
- Sister Moya Hanlen FDNSC, canon lawyer

#### Issues raised

- Canon law processes for dealing with clerics accused of child sexual abuse.
- the relationship between canon law and reporting to civil authorities, and bishops' understanding of this;
- the process for investigating allegations and determining outcomes, and the role of bishops and the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith; and
- the role and impact of secrecy around canonical processes.

Opinion varied on these issues, but the panel agreed that the canonical processes were not well adapted to dealing with the sexual abuse of children

- Changes to time limits under canon law in bringing proceedings
- The Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith's discretionary power in this regard
- The panel expressed its agreement with any proposal from the Royal Commission urging removal of time limits in child sexual abuse matters
- Laicisation of perpetrators
- Opinion varied as to whether or not Church authorities are obliged to report the sexual abuse of children and whether canonical or civil procedures take precedence over each other or whether they can be carried out concurrently

## Panel 4.2 - Sacrament of Reconciliation

### Witnesses

- Dr Frank O'Loughlin, Sacramental theologian, Parish priest Sandringham, Archdiocese of Melbourne
- Professor Ian Waters, Lecturer canon Law, Catholic Theological College, University of Divinity, Victoria
- Dr Joseph Grayland, Liturgical Theologian, New Zealand
- Father Frank Brennan SJ AO, Published in the area of the Sacrament of Reconciliation  
Chief Executive Officer, Catholic Social Services Australia
- Father Laurie McNamara CM, Moral Theologian, Parish Priest St Joseph's Malvern, Archdiocese of Melbourne
- Bishop Terence Curtin, Auxiliary Bishop Archdiocese of Melbourne, Chairman, Bishops Commission for Doctrine and Morals

### Issues raised

- Misconceptions surrounding the practice of confession
- The need for clarification
- Most panelists agreeing that the seal was restricted to whatever sins of the penitent were revealed to the priest and did not cover the revelation in the confessional of sins by another person.
- Whether the Royal Commission might make recommendations regarding the circumstances in which absolution could be deferred
- Age at which children make their first confession should be deferred?
- In service for confessors
- Royal Commission said there's a lack of confidence in the Church due to a misunderstanding of confession

- Royal Commission sought clarification from the appropriate ACBC committee regarding what is and what is not covered by the seal of confession

Day 5, Friday 10 February 2017

Panel 5.1 – International safeguarding

#### Witnesses

- Ms Teresa Devlin, Chief Executive Officer, National Board for Safeguarding Children in the Catholic Church in Ireland

#### Issues raised

- Irish board effectively independent from the Church
- Case management committee provides advice to bishops and religious leaders to ensure national consistent management of claims
- canon law provides effective framework for investigation of a claim
- Complete transparency, no secret files
- Internal and external audits ensure quality assurance
- Church authority commits to making audit report public – huge cultural shift

Day 6, Monday 13 February 2017

Panel 6.1 – Formation

#### Witnesses

- Dr David Ranson, Vicar General, Diocese of Broken Bay, Parish priest Wahroonga
- Dr Christopher Geraghty, Former priest and seminary lecturer in theology
- Auxiliary Bishop Anthony Randazzo, Former rector Holy Spirit Seminary Banyo
- Dr John Chalmers, Director of Mission and Formation, Centacare Brisbane

#### Issues raised

- Inadequate historical approach to formation including on sex and celibacy
- Improvements since 1990's
- Screening and assessment of candidates, psychological assessment
- Need for ongoing systemic formation of priests
- Clericalism and whether it contributed to child sexual abuse
- Challenge of overseas priests

## Session 6.2 – Dr Gerardine Robinson

### Witness

- Dr Gerardine Robinson, Clinical psychologist and consultant

### Issues raised

- Encompass program (1997-2008) effective, closure short sighted, small percentage of attendees were child sexual abusers
- Selection of candidates should be an external process
- Re-emergence of clericalism in some seminaries
- Recycling of candidates between seminaries
- Professional supervision of priests
- Sexual orientation
- Need for appropriate education of formators and candidates
- Celibacy contributing factor to child sexual abuse, not causal
- Laicisation of clergy offenders, better to restrict and support in-house to limit recidivism

Day 7 Tuesday 14 February

Panel 7.1 – Formation

### Witnesses

- Sister Lydia Allen RSM, Human Formation, Seminary of the Good Shepherd Sydney
- Father Peter Thompson CM, Rector, Vianney College Wagga Wagga
- Father John Hogan, Rector, Holy Spirit Seminary Parramatta
- Father Brendan Kelly SJ, Provincial Delegate Jesuit Formation
- Dr David Leary OFM, Lecturer, Yarra Theological Union, University of Divinity, Victoria

### Issues raised

- Initial formation of clergy and religious
- Professional support and supervision of working priests and religious
- Variation in the current approaches to screening, selection and training of candidates
  - Age of candidates
  - Duration of formal formation/training, too long?

- Need for more regular psychological testing during formation – observation over time far more telling
- Need for more measures for nurturing candidates
- Importance of exposure to thoughts, ideas and experience rather than isolation and protection
- Commissioner Fitzgerald suggested the limited integration of seminarians within the community, is leading to a re-embrace of clericalism
- Commissioner McClellan said the consequences of clericalism had been catastrophic
- Commissioner Murray said there had been a weak pastoral response to victims
- Education of seminarians to deal with pastoral response to survivors
- Exclusion of men with 'deep seated' homosexual tendencies from the priesthood
- whether or not the seal of confession applied to a child disclosing abuse, and to perpetrators confessing abuse during confession
- education of seminarians regarding these issues
- the possible role of the notion of "ontological change" in power imbalances between priests and the laity; and
- possible cultural issues arising from the recruitment of overseas seminarians and priests.

Knowledge and opinion varied greatly amongst panel members.

## Day 8, Wednesday 15 February 2017

### Panel 8.1 - Professional support and supervision

#### Witnesses

- Sister Eveline Crotty RSM, Co-ordinator, Urban Ministry Movement, Sydney
- Dr Michelle Mulvihill, Managing Director and Principal Consultant, Corpsych Australia
- Father Gregory Bourke, National Director Clergy Life and Ministry, Australian Catholic Bishops' Conference
- Dr Michael Whelan SM, Director, Aquinas Academy, Parish Priest St Patrick's Church Hill, Sydney
- Dr David Leary OFM, Lecturer, Yarra Theological Union, University of Divinity, Victoria
- Father Thomas McDonough CP, Provincial Superior, The Passionists Holy Spirit Province, Vice President, CRA

#### Issues raised

- Professional support and supervision of priests
- Improvements since 1950s, especially since 1980's

- Relevance and impact of *Pastores Dobo Vobis* (1992), which said there is no profession job or work which does not require constant updating if it is to remain effective
- Requirements of Integrity in Ministry, which called on bishops and superiors to make available opportunities for formation and renewal
- Uptake of available support by clergy is limited, especially by priests
- Benefits of mandating ongoing formation and professional development, including improved child safety in the Church
- Role of Catholic Professional Standards setting best practice guidelines for supervision and ongoing formation, with penalties for non-compliance

## Panel 8.2 – Procedures, policies and practices in Catholic Social Services agencies

### Witnesses

- Ms Ariana Kenny, Clinical Specialist, Marist Youth Care
- Mr Michael Austin, Director, CatholicCare Wollongong
- Mr Dale West, Director, Centacare Catholic Family Services, Adelaide
- Dr Nick Halfpenny, Director (Policy and Research), MacKillop Family Services

### Issues raised

- governance structures and reporting lines
- approaches to staffing
- the legislation and regulations which underpin the work of the agency, including funding and accreditation responsibilities
- mandatory reporting requirements
- reportable conduct scheme
- issues working across state jurisdictions.
- Compliance with the child safe elements provided by the Royal Commission including screening, reporting, investigating allegations of abuse and initiatives in place for hearing the voice of the child.
- Response of the agency to date to the work of the Royal Commission

Day 9, Thursday 16 February 2017

## Panel 9.1 Catholic education offices and governance

### Witnesses

- Mr Stephen Elder OAM, Executive Director, Catholic Education Melbourne, Executive Director, Catholic Education Commission of Victoria
- Dr Tim McDonald, Executive Director, Catholic Education Western Australia
- Mr Peter Hill, Director (Employee Services), Archdiocese of Brisbane Catholic Education
- Mr John Crowley, Principal, St Patrick's College Ballarat

### Issues raised

- structure and functions of Catholic education offices and commissions
- relationship between relevant diocesan bodies, state departments and other authorities
- reporting obligations including to the police and to the relevant state department
- the role of the Catholic Education office/commission in this process
- whether reporting obligations are the same for employees and diocesan priests
- registration arrangements for teachers – lay and religious
- Working with Children Checks and other relevant checks including who is mandated to have a clearance to work with children (volunteers, teachers, chaplains, parish priests)
- accessing files from other states
- the role of Catholic Professional Standards Ltd and changes that might result from the work of the new entity
- the extent of involvement of parish priests in programs in Catholic schools
- in Victoria, possible issues arising out of the role of parish priest as employer
- the relationship of the Catholic education office with the professional standards office
- whether the Catholic education office has an investigative role in relation to student protection matters
- responses to legislative changes in Victoria
- a school's role in complaints handling and reporting
- staff training and professional development
- communication with and engagement of the child's parents, police, the school community and the professional standards office
- the sacrament of reconciliation

## Panel 9.2 - Child safety, complaint handling and risk management

### Witnesses

- Mr Mark Eustance, Director of Professional Standards for the Catholic Church, Queensland
- Ms Claire Pirola, Manager, Office for Safeguarding & Professional Standards, Diocese of Parramatta
- Ms Karen Larkman, Director of Safeguarding and Ministerial Integrity Office, Archdiocese of Sydney
- Ms Andrea Musulin, Safeguarding Project Officer, Archdiocese of Perth
- Mr Sean Tynan, Manager, Zimmerman Services

### Issues raised

- Described various complaints handling processes
- Declining use of Towards Healing (poor resourcing and implementation)
- structure of their organisations and lines of accountability
- parish structures and the degree of independence of their respective offices
- the relationship with the state professional standards office
- the Church's national complaints data base
- professional development and staff training opportunities and whether mandatory
- processes and policies for reporting to police, including whether blind reports are made
- the importance of the exchange of information with other agencies, especially with the police
- importance of relationship with police, ombudsman, office of the children's guardian
- challenges, including a culture of discretion
- need for greater awareness of boundary violations and grooming
- need for early intervention with high risk behaviour in adults working with children
- need for national consistency
- need for availability of accurate, public data
- appropriate people in leadership roles to influence cultural change
- need for mandatory safeguarding training for all priests and clergy
- the need for more work on prevention, detection and reducing opportunities for offences
- the need for increased opportunities for families and children to report
- The need for sex education for young children



- Managing risk when there's a known sex offender in the parish (having served a sentence)
- The need to strengthen information sharing arrangements

Day 10, Friday 17 February 2017 – no hearing

Day 11, Monday 20 February 2017

Panel 11.1 – Catholic Professional Standards Ltd

### Witnesses

- Mr Francis Sullivan, Chief Executive Officer, Truth Justice and Healing Council
- The Hon Neville Owen, Chair, Truth Justice and Healing Council
- Archbishop Mark Coleridge, Archbishop of Brisbane; Member, Supervisory Group, Truth Justice and Healing Council

### Issues raised

- Governance
- Functional independence
- Consultation, most if not all Church authorities would sign up to the new company
- CPS to augment existing standards
- Auditing and reporting roles
- Appointment of board members
- Relationship of company with Church leaders
- Funding arrangements
- Standards should be set by CPS in areas which could help reform Church culture
- Develop standards for the operations of seminaries, selection of parish priests and dismissal of priests – in conjunction with canon law (Archbishop Coleridge)
- Elements of the constitution for amendment, including non-publication clauses
- National redress, states opt in, opt out
- Australian Catholic Ministry Register
- Need for CPS to build on RC data collection
- Establishment of the Council and CPS significant change in Church culture

## Day 12, Tuesday 21 February 2017

### Panel 12.1 – Archbishops and bishops

#### Witnesses

- Archbishop Christopher Prowse; Archbishop of Canberra and Goulburn
- Archbishop Julian Porteous, Archbishop of Hobart
- Bishop Eugene Hurley, Bishop of Darwin
- Bishop Vincent Long Van Nguyen OFM Conv, Bishop of Parramatta
- Bishop Christopher Saunders, Bishop of Broome
- Bishop Antoine-Charbel Tarabay, Bishop of Maronite Diocese of Australia

#### Issues raised

- All strongly supported national redress scheme
- All supported the establishment of CPS Ltd
- the extent to which the structure, governance and culture of the Church may have contributed to the sexual abuse of children
- the Church's reform efforts in light of the Royal Commission's work
- accountability and transparency
- mandatory reporting
- clericalism and the abuse of power
- a tendency to the restoration of the traditional model of Church
- celibacy
- seminary and ongoing formation, including psycho sexual screening
- the culture of secrecy
- the limited role of women and the laity in Church leadership
- training of overseas-born priests
- current procedures for the administration of the sacrament of reconciliation, particularly to children
- Recent initiatives
- Bishop Eugene Hurley noted that all people, including priests, are mandatory reporters in the Northern Territory, a requirement he said he expects his priests to take seriously.
- abuse was a betrayal of trust, an abuse of power, which occurred against a background of a lack of supervision and an acceptance of less than best practice

- Bishop Long told the Commission he was concerned about the trend towards more conservative candidates, operating under a 'perfect society' model of the Church promoted by previous pontificates, where the 'pecking order' was heavily tilted towards the ordained with the laity at the bottom. "We need to dismantle that model of Church".
- Bishop Long said the modern Church lacked robust governance processes and denied full participation by the faithful, and women in particular in Church governance. "For my part... as a bishop, I need to lead the way in promoting the Church as a community, a discipleship of equals, that emphasises relationships rather than power," he said. The panelists lent varying levels of support to Bishop Long's view.
- Bishop Saunders said clericalism – understood as the abuse of power and authority – was a significant problem, which he attributed to an immature, redundant understanding of Church. Consistent with the view of Bishop Long, Bishop Saunders observed that the Pope is encouraging a move towards Church as a community of service, and away from the concept of privilege.
- Bishop Tarabay told the Commission that 21 of the 54 priests of his diocese are married men, and emphasis is placed on Maronite priests living in community.

## Day 13, 22 February 2017

### Panel 13.1 – Leaders of religious institutes

#### Witnesses

- Father Brian McCoy SJ, Provincial, Australian Province of the Society of Jesus (Jesuits)
- Br Peter Clinch, Province Leader, Oceania Province of the Christian Brothers' Congregation
- Br Peter Carroll, Provincial, Marist Brothers in Australia
- Br Ambrose Payne, Professional Standards Officer, De La Salle Brothers
- Br Timothy Graham, Provincial, The Hospitaller Order of St John of God, Oceania Province
- Fr Gregory Chambers SDB, Provincial, Salesians of Don Bosco, Australia Pacific Province
- Sr Berneice Loch RSM, Institute Leader, Institute of Sisters of Mercy Australia and Papua New Guinea

#### Issues raised

- All described the history of their orders
- the geographic and demographic make-up of the congregation
- the ministries they run and governance arrangements
- All outlined reforms to governance including the development of PJPs in many cases
- significant changes to their approach to professional standards
- Each was asked about formation processes in their order

- whether they engage members who were born overseas
- whether they participate in professional supervision
- to outline processes for dealing with members of the Order who have offended
- Most were asked for a response to the data and to account for the numbers.
- All described declining numbers in vocations and how they were responding.
- All have voluntary supervision arrangements in place for their members. None has mandatory continuing education requirements.
- While acknowledging that the detail is still limited, all strongly support a national redress scheme in which all the states participate.

Day 14 Thursday 23 February 2017

Panel 14.1 – Members of the Pontifical Commission for the Protection of Minors

#### Witnesses

- Ms Kathleen McCormack AM, Australian member of the Pontifical Commission for the Protection of Minors
- Mr Bill Kilgallon OBE, New Zealand member of the Pontifical Commission for the Protection of Minors
- Professor Sheila the Baroness Hollins, United Kingdom member of the Pontifical Commission for the Protection of Minors (evidence given from London)

#### Issues raised

- Challenges for PCPM dealing with world-wide Church – cultural issues relating to child sexual abuse internationally.
- Pope Francis is very committed to dealing with child abuse
- Following the release of the *Motu proprio* 'As a loving mother' the Pope established a process through which any alleged negligence of a bishop in the exercise of his office would be considered.
- Education is the key to child safety, risk management and complaint handling
- The need for:
  - safe recruitment and training
  - the development of a safe Church environment, including education and awareness raising
  - a system for responding to abuse; and dealing with offenders and a system of independent audit and monitoring.
- the Church as a world organization is struggling to come to terms with its responsibility to ensure the safety of children

- Hopeful the Pontifical Commission for the Protection of Minors has capacity, influence and power to effect change.

## Panel 14.2 – Metropolitan Archbishops (session 1)

### Witnesses

- Archbishop Denis Hart, Archbishop of Melbourne
- Archbishop Anthony Fisher, Archbishop of Sydney
- Archbishop Mark Coleridge, Archbishop of Brisbane
- Archbishop Timothy Costelloe SDB, Archbishop of Perth
- Archbishop Philip Wilson, Archbishop of Adelaide

### Issues raised

- measures in place to ensure victims were heard
- leadership and governance issues
- all agreed that the child sex abuse scandal was a failure of the leadership of the Catholic Church with catastrophic consequences
- all agreed the Church has an obligation to be a significant part of the solution
- all said they have adopted a more consultative approach to leadership and encouraged cultural changes in relation to this, referring to the various parish and diocesan Councils put in place after the Second Vatican Council, but noted that not all dioceses embraced these opportunities due in part to the demographics and geographic isolation of the Diocese.
- Royal Commission's work will help shape the agenda for the historic 2020 Synod (Archbishop Coleridge)
- While Church structures are fixed, there's room for greater transparency, including through the release of an annual report and the publication of professional standards statistics, for example (Archbishop Costello).
- The Archdiocese of Adelaide had the lowest incidence of allegations in the data due in part Archbishop Wilson said to a long history of lay involvement in governance post Vatican II, including the participation of women.
- Archbishop Fisher said you can do a lot to engender a culture of compassion and empathy by listening to people who have suffered and exposing seminarians to challenging pastoral situations in prisons and welfare services for example.
- Archbishop Hart said there was a need for broad-based consultation ahead of the 2020 Plenary Council.

Day 15 Friday 24 February 2017

Panel 14.2 – Metropolitan Archbishops (session 2)

### Issues raised

- History of diocesan advisory, decision making and governance structures, including diocesan pastoral councils, parish councils and finance councils.
- Current structures, lines of accountability.
- Laity involvement in the appointment of bishops and the appointment and removal of parish priests.
- ontological change associated with holy orders and what that means for the way ordained men relate to people in the community.
- sacramental significance of ordination and the risk of clericalism.
- Differing views on whether or not mandatory celibacy has been a contributing factor
- All agreed with a proposition put by Justice McClellan that, if celibacy remains, it's critical the Church get its priestly selection and formation practices right.
- Measures and mechanisms in place for the care, development and supervision of priests.
- whether or not bishops have the authority to mandate professional supervision.
- whether or not priests should be licensed or registered.
- There were various opinions expressed about this.
- All agreed CPS Ltd might set and audit standards, and that this would involve a significant cultural shift.
- current practices in relation to monitoring offenders and pros and cons of laicisation.
- Reconciliation.
- Should the Australian bishops issue a statement clarifying current practice.
- All noted that confessions of children are heard in a public space on most occasions.
- There was a level of uncertainty about whether parents and children were aware of the policies.
- This issue could emerge as a national standard to be dealt with by CPS Ltd.
- Circumstances in which the seal of confession applies and circumstances when it does not.
- Opinion varied on what would happen if, during confession, a child disclosed abuse.
- The panel also discussed whether this matter was something on which clarification could be sought from the Holy See.
- The panel was asked whether they would grant absolution to a person who confessed to abusing a child. Responses varied on the circumstances in which absolution might be withheld pending action by the penitent to report to the authorities.

## Appendix 14 - Council submissions to Royal Commission Issues papers

[Council submission for Case Study 50 addressing Issues Paper 11: Then and Now - Catholic Church authorities](#)

29 December 2016

[Royal Commission Issues Paper 11, Catholic Church Final Hearing](#)

[Council submission in response to Issues Paper 10: Advocacy and Therapeutic Treatment Services](#)

26 May 2016

[Royal Commission Issues Paper No 10](#)

[Council submission in response to Issues Paper 9: Addressing the risk of child sexual abuse in primary and secondary school](#)

18 September 2015

[Royal Commission Issues Paper No 9](#)

[Council submission in response to Issues Paper 8: Police and Prosecution responses](#)

27 August 2015

[Royal Commission Issues Paper No 8](#)

[Council submission in response to Issues Paper 7: Statutory Victims of Crime Compensation Schemes](#)

2 October 2014

[Royal Commission Issues Paper No 7](#)

[Council submission in response to Issues Paper 6: Redress Schemes](#)

11 August 2014

[Royal Commission Issues Paper No 6](#)

[Council submission in response to Issues Paper 5: Civil Litigation](#)

15 April 2014

[Royal Commission Issues Paper No 5](#)

[Council submission in response to Issues Paper 4: Preventing Sexual Abuse of Children in Out-of-Home Care](#)

15 November 2013

[Royal Commission Issues Paper No 4](#)

[Council submission in response to Issues Paper 3: Child Safe Institutions](#)

11 October 2013

[Royal Commission Issues Paper No 3](#)

[Council submission in response to Issues Paper 2: \*Towards Healing\*](#)

30 September 2013

[Royal Commission Issues Paper No 2](#)

[Council submission in response to Issues Paper No. 1: Working with Children Check](#)

12 August 2013

[Royal Commission Issues Paper No 1](#)

---

## Appendix 15 - Council Consultation paper submissions

[TJHC submission to Royal Commission discussion paper: Strengthening Information Sharing Arrangements](#)

April 2017

[TJHC submission in response to Consultation Paper: Records and Recordkeeping](#)

21 November 2016

[Royal Commission Consultation Paper](#)

[TJHC submission in response to Consultation Paper: Criminal Justice](#)

14 November 2016

[Royal Commission Consultation Paper](#)

[TJHC submission in response to Consultation Paper: Institutional responses to child sex abuse in out-of-home care](#)

31 August 2016

[Royal Commission Consultation Paper](#)

[TJHC submission in response to Consultation Paper: Best Practice Principles in responding to complaints of child sexual abuse in institutions](#)

28 August 2016

[Royal Commission Consultation Paper](#)

[TJHC submission to Redress and Civil Litigation Consultation Paper](#)

16 March 2015

[Royal Commission Consultation paper](#)



## Appendix 16 - Council Media releases

### 2018

30 March	<a href="#"><u>TJHC winds up with recommendation Catholic Church puts in place high level Royal Commission implementation group</u></a>
22 March	<a href="#"><u>TJHC addresses Concerned Canberra Catholics Canberra-Goulburn Archdiocese</u></a>
9 March	<a href="#"><u>TJHC calls on all states and for the Catholic Church in NSW and Victoria to join child abuse redress scheme</u></a>
19 February	<a href="#"><u>TJHC Chair appointed to Pope's peak child protection council</u></a>
18 February	<a href="#"><u>Pope Francis renews Pontifical Commission on clergy sexual abuse giving greater role to survivors</u></a>
15 February	<a href="#"><u>COAG committee urgently needed to get redress scheme off the ground</u></a>
8 February	<a href="#"><u>Catholic Church backs PM's call for states and territories to join national child sexual abuse redress scheme</u></a>

### 2017

28 November	<a href="#"><u>TJHC addresses lay Catholics in Perth and Directors of Education in Sydney</u></a>
19 November	<a href="#"><u>Ballarat Parish Priest speaks about his journey through the Royal Commission</u></a>
14 November	<a href="#"><u>TJHC meets with CSPA in Hobart and MacKillop Family Services in Melbourne</u></a>
14 November	<a href="#"><u>TJHC meets with Catholic Secondary School Principals</u></a>
26 October	<a href="#"><u>Commonwealth releases national redress Bill</u></a>
25 October	<a href="#"><u>TJHC CEO addresses WA Bar association on child sexual abuse crisis in Catholic Church</u></a>
20 October	<a href="#"><u>Call for Church funding for independent Catholic-related support services for child sexual abuse survivors</u></a>
13 October	<a href="#"><u>Panel of Church leaders discuss child sexual abuse crisis and way forward for Catholic Church</u></a>
15 August	<a href="#"><u>Clarification on reporting requirements regarding child sexual abuse and the confessional</u></a>
14 August	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission releases criminal justice reform recommendations, including changes to religious confessions</u></a>
3 August	<a href="#"><u>Communicating with child sexual abuse survivors during criminal court proceedings</u></a>
28 June	<a href="#"><u>Council joins Sandringham community at Spirituality in the Pub Melbourne</u></a>
22 June	<a href="#"><u>Council addresses CRA National Assembly</u></a>
28 May	<a href="#"><u>Vale Anthony Foster</u></a>
10 May	<a href="#"><u>Commonwealth announces funding for child sexual abuse redress scheme</u></a>
27 April	<a href="#"><u>Information sharing vital for the protection of children</u></a>
5 April	<a href="#"><u>TJHC meets with clergy in Brisbane and Catholic social services leaders in Sydney</u></a>
21 March	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission starts final public hearing as Catholic Church calls again for national redress</u></a>
17 March	<a href="#"><u>TJHC submission to Royal Commission examines causes of child sexual abuse in Catholic Church</u></a>
13 March	<a href="#"><u>Catholic Church in Australia needs to continue to push for reform</u></a>

10 March	<a href="#">TJHC Speech - Where to from here? - Catalyst for Renewal: Hunters Hill Sydney</a>
2 March	<a href="#">TJHC response to resignation of Marie Collins, abuse survivor, from Vatican's child protection commission</a>
16 February	<a href="#">TJHC Statement - Royal Commission Full Data Report</a>
6 February	<a href="#">TJHC Statement - Case Study 50 Catholic Church Final Hearing</a>
2 February	<a href="#">Catholic Church's final Royal Commission case study starts Monday</a>
24 January	<a href="#">The Catholic Diocese of Maitland-Newcastle announces new child protection advisory Council</a>
16 January	<a href="#">Pope Francis appoints O'Malley in renewed push to make bishops accountable for clerical sexual abuse failings</a>

## 2016

16 December	<a href="#">Members of Commonwealth's independent child sexual abuse redress Advisory Council announced</a>
8 December	<a href="#">TJHC welcomes new Vatican child sex abuse website</a>
29 November	<a href="#">TJHC welcomes new Victorian laws which reverse onus of proof in civil child abuse cases</a>
22 November	<a href="#">New independent Catholic Church agency established to set, monitor and report on child and vulnerable adult protection standards</a>
18 November	<a href="#">TJHC welcomes release of Melbourne Response review and the doubling of compensation limit</a>
14 November	<a href="#">TJHC makes range of recommendations in Criminal Justice submission to Royal Commission</a>
14 November	Royal <a href="#">Commission announces final hearings</a>
14 November	<a href="#">TJHC welcomes clear instruction from Melbourne Archbishop on holding school Reconciliation in public</a>
8 November	<a href="#">TJHC joins Notting Hill community at Spirituality in the Pub</a>
4 November	<a href="#">Catholic Church's Council welcomes Commonwealth child sexual abuse redress announcement</a>
3 November	<a href="#">TJHC meets with community groups and others across Victoria</a>
3 November	<a href="#">Children reluctant to speak out about sexual abuse</a>
27 October	<a href="#">Priest and male religious register now up and running</a>
29 September	<a href="#">TJHC meets with Catholic community in Melbourne</a>
19 August	<a href="#">TJHC welcomes RC Child Safe reports</a>
11 August	<a href="#">TJHC Chair addresses leaders of Catholic agencies in Perth</a>
26 July	<a href="#">TJHC in conversation with delegates from Rome</a>
23 July	<a href="#">St Vincent de Paul National Council Meeting Darwin</a>
19 July	<a href="#">TJHC addresses leading Catholic health provider</a>
5 July	<a href="#">TJHC briefs Capuchin Friars on issues emerging from Royal Commission</a>
24 June	<a href="#">ALP calls for bipartisanship for national redress</a>
23 June	<a href="#">CRA fully backs child sexual abuse reform agenda</a>
23 June	<a href="#">TJHC joins conversation at Bendigo Spirituality in the Pub</a>
22 June	<a href="#">Mt Gambier community visit</a>
16 June	<a href="#">TJHC visits St Andrew's College in Cairns and meets with students and staff</a>

2 June	<a href="#">Churches meet on redress in Australia</a>
2 June	<a href="#">TJHC in conversation with Sunbury community</a>
4 May	<a href="#">50th World Communications Day opportunity for parishes to speak out</a>
29 April	<a href="#">Royal Commission closes registrations for private sessions</a>
21 April	<a href="#">TJHC CEO talks at Newman College Council dinner about the challenges facing the Catholic Church</a>
21 April	<a href="#">Royal Commission releases final report into St Joseph's Orphanage, Neerkol</a>
20 April	<a href="#">REPORT RC Roundtable discussion - Police Reporting and other criminal justice issues</a>
18 April	<a href="#">Royal Commission gives directions on finalising Ballarat and Melbourne public hearings</a>
12 April	<a href="#">In conversation with Baroness Sheila Hollins, Member of the Pontifical Council for the Protection of Minors</a>
15 March	<a href="#">United call for Urgent Action on Redress</a>
10 March	<a href="#">Melbourne parishes gather to discuss Royal Commission and child sexual abuse</a>
9 March	<a href="#">TJHC welcomes Canberra Goulburn Archdiocese safeguarding announcement</a>
9 March	<a href="#">Royal Commission releases OOHC consultation paper</a>
19 February	<a href="#">Ballarat bishop to stand in as defendant in civil claims</a>
17 February	<a href="#">Statement: Cardinal Pell appearance Ballarat</a>
16 February	<a href="#">Loud Fence movement grows in Catholic community</a>
16 February	<a href="#">TJHC in conversation with Victorian Catholic school principals</a>
11 February	<a href="#">TJHC reiterates Bishops' moral obligation to report child sexual abuse</a>
29 January	<a href="#">TJHC welcomes child sexual abuse redress statement from Government but concerned about delays</a>

## 2015

11 December	<a href="#">TJHC welcomes RC report into Marist Brothers Canberra hearing</a>
23 November	<a href="#">Catholic Church releases guidelines for responding to civil claims for child sexual abuse</a>
20 November	<a href="#">Melbourne Royal Commission public hearing starts next week</a>
20 November	<a href="#">Catholic Church in consultation with other Churches</a>
5 November	<a href="#">TJHC welcomes NSW and Victorian Government support for national child sexual abuse redress scheme</a>
27 October	<a href="#">Federal Labor commits to national redress scheme</a>
22 October	<a href="#">New laws for children giving evidence in NSW child sex abuse cases</a>
21 October	<a href="#">TJHC CEO delivers wide-ranging speech on challenges for the Catholic Church as it faces the Royal Commission</a>
20 October	<a href="#">The Royal Commission and the unique challenges for the Catholic Church</a> Blackfriars Lecture Series - Australian Catholic University
20 October	<a href="#">Catholic Social Services Australia National Conference Canberra</a>
13 October	<a href="#">Sacred Heart College visit Melbourne</a>
1 October	<a href="#">Governments start to move on child sex abuse redress scheme</a>
30 September	<a href="#">New Child Protection Office for Archdiocese of Sydney</a>
22 September	<a href="#">TJHC child sexual abuse in schools Royal Commission submission</a>
14 September	<a href="#">Royal Commission releases child sexual abuse redress and civil litigation findings</a>

14 September	<a href="#"><u>TJHC welcomes release of Royal Commission findings into <i>The Melbourne Response</i></u></a>
14 September	<a href="#"><u>Jesuits release new child protection policy</u></a>
9 September	<a href="#"><u>Catholic Church calls for nationally consistent child sex abuse police reporting law</u></a>
4 September	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission to hold joint public hearing into Archdiocese of Melbourne and Ballarat</u></a>
4 September	<a href="#"><u>National Child Protection Week 2015</u></a>
5 August	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission to hear evidence from retired Bishop Geoffrey Robinson: architect of <i>Towards Healing</i></u></a>
11 June	<a href="#"><u>TJHC visits Stella Maris Parish on Sunshine Coast</u></a>
11 June	<a href="#"><u>New Vatican department to investigate bishops who cover up sexual abuse</u></a>
5 June	<a href="#"><u>TJHC welcomes release of RC findings into St Ann's Special School in Adelaide</u></a>
22 May	<a href="#"><u>Statement - Francis Sullivan CEO TJHC - Questioning of survivor witnesses in Ballarat Hearings</u></a>
22 May	<a href="#"><u>Senior Church leaders commit to no Ellis Defence</u></a>
5 May	<a href="#"><u>Details of Ballarat Royal Commission public hearing announced</u></a>
1 May	<a href="#"><u>TJHC community briefings continue</u></a>
14 April	<a href="#"><u>TJHC addresses international gathering of priests</u></a>
10 April	<a href="#"><u>Rockhampton Royal Commission public hearing starts next week</u></a>
23 March	<a href="#"><u>Catholic Church calls for fair, just and compassionate national redress scheme for child sexual abuse survivors</u></a>
10 March	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission announces public hearing into redress for survivors of child sexual abuse</u></a>
20 February	<a href="#"><u>Archdiocese of Brisbane responds to Royal Commission findings in <i>Towards Healing</i> case</u></a>
6 February	<a href="#"><u>Pope Francis writes to Church leaders calling for full cooperation with Vatican's child protection Commission</u></a>
4 February	<a href="#"><u>TJHC meets with Discalced Carmelite Friars in south west Sydney</u></a>
30 January	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission releases child sexual abuse redress and civil litigation consultation paper</u></a>

## 2014

23 December	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission releases findings in public hearing about residential homes run by the Christian Brothers in WA</u></a>
23 December	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission releases findings in Nestor public hearing</u></a>
18 December	<a href="#"><u>Pope Francis appoints leading Wollongong welfare worker to Vatican child protection commission</u></a>
15 December	<a href="#"><u>TJHC meets with Wollongong diocesan leaders and parishioners</u></a>
12 December	<a href="#"><u>Truth Justice and Healing Council releases Activity Report</u></a>
9 December	<a href="#"><u>Catholic Church's child sex abuse spokesperson meets with parishioners in Griffith NSW</u></a>
3 December	<a href="#"><u>Catholic Church's child sex abuse spokesperson to meet with parishioners in Griffith</u></a>
19 November	<a href="#"><u>TJHC meets with Parishes in Sydney's north and south</u></a>
13 November	<a href="#"><u>TJHC CEO meets with national leaders in Catholic education</u></a>
7 November	<a href="#"><u>TJHC meets with Bathurst diocesan leaders</u></a>
5 November	<a href="#"><u>Parishes and Catholic agencies called on to keep in touch with Church reform agenda</u></a>

4 November	<a href="#"><u>TJHC CEO visits Our Lady of the Rosary Parish in Brisbane</u></a>
31 October	<a href="#"><u>TJHC meets with senior Catholic educators in Canberra Goulburn</u></a>
28 October	<a href="#"><u>TJHC CEO visits Holy Family Church in Canberra</u></a>
28 October	<a href="#"><u>New Victorian provisions for the reporting to Police of child sexual abuse</u></a>
27 October	<a href="#"><u>Tasmanian Catholic Schools Parents Council acknowledge the importance of vigilance</u></a>
21 October	<a href="#"><u>Catholics to show support for child sexual abuse survivors through Blue Knot Day</u></a>
21 October	<a href="#"><u>Catholic welfare and other services still respected by community</u></a>
8 October	<a href="#"><u>National Redress Scheme Preferable to Existing Victims of Crime Compensation Schemes</u></a>
15 September	<a href="#"><u>Special service for child abuse survivors in Ballarat</u></a>
14 September	<a href="#"><u>Rockhampton Diocesan Catholic Education Office student protection in-service</u></a>
2 September	<a href="#"><u>TJHC welcomes additional time and money for Child Abuse Royal Commission</u></a>
13 August	<a href="#"><u>Catholic Church calls for national child abuse redress scheme built on fairness, generosity and compassion</u></a>
25 July	<a href="#"><u>TJHC meets St Charles Borromeo Parishioners in Sydney</u></a>
23 July	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission announces public hearing into Melbourne Response</u></a>
17 July	<a href="#"><u>TJHC CEO hears from Catholic Social Services leaders in Victoria</u></a>
8 July	<a href="#"><u>Pope Francis meets with survivors of clerical sexual abuse</u></a>
3 July	<a href="#"><u>Truth Justice and Healing Council briefs Clergy Life and Ministry on Royal Commission into Child Sex Abuse</u></a>
31 June	<a href="#"><u>TJHC welcomes Royal Commission interim report and supports extended timetable and funding</u></a>
25 June	<a href="#"><u>TJHC addresses CRA National Assembly</u></a>
17 June	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission Roundtable looks to national Working with Children Checks</u></a>
6 May	<a href="#"><u>Retired WA Supreme Court Judge appointed Chair of Catholic Church's Truth Justice and Healing Council</u></a>
5 May	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission to hold hearing into Diocese of Wollongong</u></a>
27 May	<a href="#"><u>Pope Francis set to meet survivors of clerical sexual abuse</u></a>
26 May	<a href="#"><u>Principals and priests meet in Shepparton to talk child protection</u></a>
23 May	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission to hold Marist Brothers public Hearing in Canberra</u></a>
19 May	<a href="#"><u>Queensland Catholic Education Commission meets with Child Protection Experts</u></a>
6 May	<a href="#"><u>Catholic Church to Review Training for New Priests on Child Protection</u></a>
5 May	<a href="#"><u>Pope's Child Sexual Abuse Commission Meets for First Time in Rome</u></a>
25 April	<a href="#"><u>Truth Justice and Healing Council Chair, Barry O'Keefe, dies peacefully in Sydney surrounded by family</u></a>
15 April	<a href="#"><u>Truth Justice and Healing Council Calls for Changes to Civil Litigation Processes</u></a>
23 March	<a href="#"><u>Vatican announces members of child abuse Commission</u></a>
25 February	<a href="#"><u>Cardinal Pell appointed to senior position in the Vatican</u></a>
12 February	<a href="#"><u>TJHC supports CLAN call for National Compensation Scheme</u></a>
6 February	<a href="#"><u>Vatican needs to be open and transparent on sex abuse issues</u></a>
20 January	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission announces details of public hearing into allegations of sexual abuse at Toowoomba Primary School in 2007</u></a>

## 2013

26 December	<a href="#"><u>Australian Bishops and religious leaders remain united behind Truth Justice and Healing Council</u></a>
12 December	<a href="#"><u>Victorian Government to create new sexual predator grooming laws</u></a>
7 December	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission Hearings into <i>Towards Healing</i> process start on Monday</u></a>
6 December	<a href="#"><u>Pope announces new Child Sexual Abuse Commission</u></a>
3 December	<a href="#"><u>Video of Francis Sullivan's Ballarat speech available online</u></a>
22 November	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission announces details of <i>Towards Healing</i> hearings in December</u></a>
20 November	<a href="#"><u>All Catholics need to take responsibility for how the Church responds to victims of child sexual abuse</u></a>
20 November	<a href="#"><u>Ballarat Speech: Taking Responsibility</u></a>
14 November	<a href="#"><u>National Child Abuse Compensation scheme – with no caps - should be considered.</u></a>
12 November	<a href="#"><u>Parish priests asked to read Catholic Church sexual abuse commitment statement at Mass</u></a>
12 November	<a href="#"><u>Commitment Statement from leaders of the Catholic Church in Australia</u></a>
22 October	<a href="#"><u>Truth Justice and Healing Council information flyers to all diocese and congregations</u></a>
21 October	<a href="#"><u>TJHC calls for national approach for better child protection in institutions</u></a>
3 October	<a href="#"><u>Catholic Church releases child sexual abuse reform proposals.</u></a>
17 September	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission lays out timetable for hearings: <i>Towards Healing</i> to be examined in December</u></a>
15 September	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission public hearings into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse start in Sydney</u></a>
8 September	<a href="#"><u>Australia can learn from Irish experience</u></a>
3 September	<a href="#"><u>TJHC update on submissions to Royal Commission</u></a>
2 September	<a href="#"><u>TJHC CEO visits Melbourne's St Kevin's Catholic school</u></a>
27 August	<a href="#"><u>TJHC preparing submission to Royal Commission on child safe institutions.</u></a>
13 August	<a href="#"><u>TJHC calls for National approach for Working with Children</u></a>
8 August	<a href="#"><u>TJHC visits Perth</u></a>
5 August	<a href="#"><u>TJHC CEO speaks at Brisbane Catholic Education leadership day</u></a>
16 July	<a href="#"><u>TJHC supports additional funding for child sexual abuse support services</u></a>
9 July	<a href="#"><u>TJHC briefs leaders in Wagga Wagga</u></a>
15 July	<a href="#"><u>TJHC supports additional funding for child sexual abuse support services</u></a>
9 July	<a href="#"><u>Royal Commission calls for closer examination of <i>Towards Healing</i></u></a>
3 July	<a href="#"><u>TJHC briefs Clergy Life and Ministry On Royal Commission</u></a>
25 June	<a href="#"><u>TJHC briefs CRA on Royal Commission into Sex Abuse</u></a>
22 June	<a href="#"><u>TJHC CEO's Address to St Thomas More Forum Canberra, Media Release</u></a>
22 June	<a href="#"><u>TJHC CEO's Address to St Thomas More Forum Speech</u></a>
20 June	<a href="#"><u>TJHC CEO's visits Church leaders in north-west Sydney</u></a>
17 June	<a href="#"><u>TJHC CEO meets with Bishop of Bunbury and local priests in WA</u></a>
12 June	<a href="#"><u>TJHC encourages victims of sexual abuse to contact the Royal Commission</u></a>
16 May	<a href="#"><u>Truth Justice and Healing Council launches website</u></a>

- 9 May [NSW Government should re-think victims of crime compensation scheme: TJHC CEO says](#)
- 8 May [TJHC CEO addresses Catechist Directors about the Royal Commission](#)
- 1 May [TJHC CEO meets Townsville Bishop and other locals](#)
- 19 April [TJHC holds first meeting](#)
- 6 April [TJHC welcomes Pope's statement on Church sexual abuse](#)
- 3 April [Royal Commission hearings into Child Sexual Abuse](#)
- 3 April [Members of Truth Justice and Healing Council announced](#)
- 11 January [Catholic Church responds to Royal Commission terms of reference](#)
- 12 December [Announcement of Chair & CEO of the Catholic Church Council for the Royal Commission](#)

---

## Appendix 17 - Prepared speeches

Throughout the course of the Royal Commission the TJHC CEO Francis Sullivan has addressed and presented at many hundreds of community and stakeholders meetings.

Only at a handful of these events did he present a prepared speech.

[Concerned Catholics Canberra-Goulburn Archdiocese Public Forum](#)  
22 March 2018

[WA Bar Association](#)  
10 October 2017

[Concerned Catholics Canberra-Goulburn Archdiocese Public Forum Speech](#)  
27 April 2017

[Where to from here?](#)  
10 March 2017 - Catalyst for Renewal, Hunters Hill Sydney NSW

[TJHC Statement - Case Study 50 Catholic Church final hearing](#)  
6 February 2017 - Royal Commission Hearing Room, Sydney

[Speech Notes for Newman College Council Dinner](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 20 April 2016, Melbourne Victoria

[The Royal Commission and the unique challenges for the Catholic Church](#)  
20 October 2015 - Blackfriars Lecture Series, Australian Catholic University, Canberra

[Taking Responsibility](#)  
20 November 2013, Ballarat Victoria

[St Thomas More Forum Speech](#)  
22 June 2013



## Appendix 18 - Council Newsletters

[RC final public hearing; TJHC addresses lay community in Perth, Education Directors in Sydney; WA legislation](#), 1 December 2017

[Ballarat Priest's RC journey, Vital days for national redress, National Church Life Survey, and more....](#), 17 November 2017

[National redress Bill, Vatican delegation, Canberra Catholics make submission, Frankly speaking and more](#), 8 November 2017

[Call for support CSA service funding. WA Bar Association speech, Yarra Theological Union Panel, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 25 October 2017

[Pope Francis: Church late in addressing abuse scandal; Bishop Long: Elitist priesthood drawing its last breaths](#), 6 October 2017

[National redress hurdles, international sex abuse report, more...](#), 20 September 2017

[RC releases criminal justice report, New CPS Ltd Directors, Frankly speaking, more](#), 29 August 2017

[TJHC newsletter, 10 August 2017 – French's Forrest parish visit, DPP conference, redress legislation, frankly speaking and more](#), 11 August 2017

[TJHC Newsletter - male religious apologise, NCR child sex abuse series and more](#), 27 July 2017

[TJHC Newsletter - Two new Commission research reports, SIP in Sandringham, CCI documents, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 13 July 2017

[St Pats Ballarat apology, Cardinal Pell charges, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 30 June 2017

[Stannies apology, can child sex abusers be cured? Frankly Speaking and more](#), 21 June 2017

[EREA apology, Tas Govt redress, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 09 June 2017

[Inaugural CPS CEO appointed, call for NZ royal commission, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 02 June 2017

[National redress, new cardinals, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 26 May 2017

[Safe as Churches? Government push for national redress, more](#), 19 May 2017

[Budget funding for redress, struggle for credibility, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 12 May 2017

[Canberra Catholic, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 05 May 2017

[Information sharing submission, new book on priests, Frankly speaking and more](#), 28 April 2017

[Week commencing 17 April 2017](#), 21 April 2017

[Priest conference, new Commission research, new Vic grooming laws, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 11 April 2017

[Final hearing, does the media hate the Church?, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 07 April 2017

[Royal Commission final hearing, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 31 March 2017

[The Pope and child sexual abuse, Commissioner McClellan legal speech, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 23 March 2017

[New Commission research, TJHC final submission, Frankly Speaking, Catalyst for Renewal speech](#), 17 March 2017

[Marie Collins resigns from Vatican child protection body, Frankly speaking, more....](#), 10 March 2017

[Frankly speaking, Is Francis actually backsliding on punishing abuse?, more....](#), 02 March 2017

[Week commencing 20 February 2017](#), 24 February 2017

[Second week of Catholic Wrap up, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 17 February 2017

[Final hearing of the Catholic Church, Frankly speaking, National Redress, more....](#), 10 February 2017

[Final hearing, TJHC submissions and recommendations, Frankly speaking, more.....](#), 02 February 2017

[New protection Council for Newcastle Diocese, St Stannies apology, Irish report released....](#), 25 January 2017

[Pope's abuse zero tolerance, possible police apology, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 20 January 2017

[Redress advisory Council announced, Safety of young people in residential care research, Frankly speaking, more](#), 21 December 2016

[December 2016 Week 2](#), 15 December 2016

[New Vatican child sexual abuse website, Commission's Criminal Justice public hearing, Frank Brennan on the confessional, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 09 December 2016

[Criminal Justice submissions published, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 01 December 2016

[Church launches new Child protection company, Changes to Melb Response, Frankly speaking and more](#), 24 November 2016

[AB Hart on Reconciliation, RC final hearing, Frankly speaking and more](#), 17 November 2016

[Spirituality in the Pub, more support for national redress, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 11 November 2016

[Commission's wrap up hearing announced, TJHC visits Victoria, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 07 November 2016

[Catholic register for priests and male religious, Qld supports national redress, more....](#), 27 October 2016

[Child to child abuse case study, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 19 October 2016

[Calls for national redress, CLAN protesting police, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 13 October 2016

[Child sexual abuse reforms in Armidale, Blue Knot Day, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 07 October 2016

[New child sexual abuse research, private hearing registration, Ballarat Catholics, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 30 September 2016

[Child sexual abuse training for new Bishops](#), 22 September 2016

[Farrell case study, Pope's Day of Prayer, four final public hearing reports released, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 15 September 2016

[Newcastle hearing, Jesuits safeguarding strategy, Frankly speaking, more....](#), 08 September 2016

[Newcastle hearing, Frankly Speaking, more....](#), 01 September 2016

[Legal issues, child safe recommendations, Frankly Speaking and more....](#), 26 August 2016

[Association of Child Welfare Agencies, new child protection training for schools, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 19 August 2016

[National Child Protection Week, Qld Govt backs national redress, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 12 August 2016

[Maitland Newcastle RC hearing, ACT and Qld Govt remove child sexual abuse limitations, Vatican official visits Ballarat, Frankly speaking and more](#), 03 August 2016

[Celibacy from the perspective of a priest in training, NSW Government apologies, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 27 July 2016

[LCM health care meeting, AB Fisher on the Royal Commission, OOHC submissions published, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 22 July 2016

[Disability service providers hearing, Brazilian Archbishop resigns, Frankly speaking](#), 14 July 2016

[Mt Gambier visit, two new RC hearings, St Pat's Ballarat leading the way in child protection, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 07 July 2016

[ALP calls for bi-partisan approach to national redress, Frank Brennan on law reform, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 01 July 2016

[CRA National Assembly, Popes child protection graduates, Frankly speaking, community visits and more](#), 24 June 2016

[Cairns visit, Loud Fence movement, RC disability services hearing, Frankly speaking, more....](#), 17 June 2016

[Frankly speaking, more....](#), 07 June 2016

[Ridsdale scratched from St Pat's honour board, Frankly speaking, more....](#), 03 June 2016

[Frankly speaking, Christian Brothers report revisited claims, more....](#), 27 May 2016

[Frankly speaking, more....](#), 20 May 2016

[Catholic Church final hearing, Frankly speaking, national redress an election issue....](#), 11 May 2016

[RC closes private session registrations, Popes rails against child sexual abuse, Frankly speaking, more....](#), 05 May 2016

[Frankly speaking, more....](#), 29 April 2016

[Bishop Long on child sexual abuse, RC final report into St Joseph's Orphanage Neerkol, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 22 April 2016

[Ballarat Loud Fence to stay put for now, Frankly speaking, more....](#), 13 April 2016

[Bishop Mulkearns dies, Frankly speaking and more](#), 06 April 2016

[Bishop calls for Church renewal, child sexual abuse support services survey, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 31 March 2016

[United call for national child sexual abuse redress, Frankly Speaking, RC calls for submissions on responding to abuse claims](#), 23 March 2016

[New child protection unit in Canberra - Goulburn archdiocese, RC WWCC submissions, Frankly speaking, and more....](#), 15 March 2016

[Ballarat hearing, Cardinal Pell from Rome, survivors tell their stories and more](#), 04 March 2016

[Ballarat hearing, video evidence, the Loud Fence movement, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 23 February 2016

[New child protection laws in ACT, Vatican clears up Priest reporting requirements, Frankly speaking and more](#), 17 February 2016

[Cardinal Pell to give evidence via video, Frankly speaking, more....](#), 11 February 2016

[Commonwealth responds to RC redress proposals, new child protection laws in Vic, Frankly Speaking, and more](#), 03 February 2016

[Ballarat hearing adjourned, Cardinal Pell attendance postponed, Frankly speaking, more....](#), 18 December 2015

[Ballarat hearing, No Christmas cheer for abuse survivors, Frankly speaking, more....](#), 10 December 2015

[Melbourne hearing continues, CBs adopt legal guidelines, UK child sexual abuse inquiry, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 03 December 2015

[Melbourne hearing, child sexual abuse research, Frankly speaking and more](#), 27 November 2015

[Melbourne hearing starts, Kings in Sydney under investigation, Frankly speaking and more](#), 20 November 2015

[RC identifying child sexual abuse research, TJHC members talk to family synod, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 13 November 2015

[NSW, Vic support national redress, NSW extends time for child sexual abuse claims....](#), 06 November 2015

[A clear case for moral leadership](#), 30 October 2015

[Blackfriars speech, new child sexual abuse evidence laws in NSW, Blue Knot Day more](#), 23 October 2015

[Melb parish visit, redress confusion, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 16 October 2015

[Royal Commission's latest issues paper and research report, Scottish Inquiry, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 09 October 2015

[Govt start to move on redress, new child protectorate in AD of Sydney, Pope meets abuse survivors, Frankly speaking and more](#), 01 October 2015

[Fighting child sexual abuse in schools, the Pope in the US, Frankly Speaking and the case for a national redress scheme](#), 25 September 2015

[Royal Commission reports on redress and \*The Melbourne Response\* released, Frankly speaking and more](#), 17 September 2015

[Melb RC hearing, TJHC police reporting submission, Child protection week, Frankly speaking and more](#), 10 September 2015

[Royal Commission reaches half way mark, Belconnen forum, more....](#), 03 September 2015

[Bishop Geoffrey Robinson Hearing, Victorian Children Commissioner's Report, more....](#), 27 August 2015

[Working With Children Checks, more....](#), 20 August 2015

[Vic Govt redress paper, Frankly speaking and more](#), 12 August 2015

[RC Robinson hearing, interviews with leading Catholic journalists, RC youth survey, Frankly speaking and more](#), 07 August 2015

[Labor backs redress, Vic police suicide report inaccurate, RC releases sentencing paper and more](#), 29 July 2015

[RC Chair address Uniting Church assembly, 30 years of child sexual abuse reporting in National Catholic Reporter, Frankly speaking and more](#), 16 July 2015

[New safeguarding program in Perth, Christian Bros redress update, Frankly speaking and more](#), 09 July 2015

[Out-of-home care hearing continues, Frankly speaking, Fairbridge class action finalised and more](#), 02 July 2015

[CRA National Assembly, Frankly Speaking, More....](#), 26 June 2015

[Hobart parish meeting, Perth safeguarding project, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 18 June 2015

[Pope's announcement, Frankly speaking, more...](#), 12 June 2015

[Ballarat hearing adjourned, Frankly speaking, more....](#), 04 June 2015

[Ballarat hearing continues, Expert evidence on pathology of abuse, Sydney to review standards](#), 28 May 2015

[Ballarat hearing, Frankly Speaking](#), 22 May 2015

[Ballarat hearing starts, budget money for RC, Frankly speaking and more](#), 15 May 2015

[Preparing for Ballarat, RC issues paper on police and the Courts, latest blog and more](#), 08 May 2015

[Ballarat hearing, Governments redress responses, Frankly speaking and more](#), 01 May 2015

[Neerkol Hearing finishes, Perth Safeguarding Officer speaks out, FS blog and more.](#), 24 April 2015

[Neerkol hearing, Latest blog, more... \(copy\)](#), 17 April 2015

[TJHC newsletter, Rockhampton public hearing, redress response from Government and more](#), 10 April 2015

[TJHC redress submission](#), 30 March 2015

[Redress hearing, Christian Brothers update, Frankly speaking and more](#), 18 March 2015

[Out-of-Home Care hearings begin](#), 13 March 2015

[Frankly speaking blog, Rockhampton hearings and more](#), 06 March 2015

[Newcastle meetings, Frankly Speaking blog and more](#), 27 February 2015

[Frankly Speaking Blog, Forgotten Australians study and more](#), 18 February 2015

[News from the Truth, Justice and Healing Council](#), 11 February 2015

[Rockhampton hearing, Frankly Speaking Blog, Redress and civil litigation consultation and more](#), 05 February 2015

[Putting People First](#), 29 January 2015

[Frankly Speaking blog, Royal Commission activities and more](#), 23 January 2015

[Wollongong meeting, latest blog and more](#), 17 December 2014

[Activity report, Griffith meeting, Frankly Speaking blog and more](#), 12 December 2014

[Establishing an independent body to handle complaints and more](#), 05 December 2014

[Redress and civil litigation, Frankly Speaking blog and more](#), 28 November 2014

[Restorative Justice, Frankly Speaking blog, interviews and more](#), 21 November 2014

[TJHC in Bathurst, new Archbishop of Sydney, Frankly speaking blog and more](#), 13 November 2014

[News from the Truth Justice and Healing Council](#), 06 November 2014

[Tasmanian Schools Parents Council, Blue Knot Day, Frankly Speaking Blog, and more](#), 30 October 2014

[Catholic Social Services, message to Catholic Youth Ministries, Blue Knot Day and more](#), 23 October 2014

[TJHC meets with Leeton Catholic Community, Frankly Speaking, radio interview and more](#), 17 October 2014

[News from the Truth Justice and Healing Council](#), 09 October 2014

[Blue Knot Day, US experience \(quest blog\) and more](#), 03 October 2014

[New Archbishop of Sydney, Frankly Speaking, US child protection expert and more](#), 24 September 2014

[Child protection expert appointed, Ballarat service for survivors, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 15 September 2014

[Royal Commission extension announced, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 04 September 2014

[Melbourne hearing, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 29 August 2014

[Melbourne Response hearing begins, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 21 August 2014

[National victims' redress scheme, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 13 August 2014

[News from the TJH Council, Child Protection Week 2014, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 08 August 2014

[TJHC meets with Ryde Parish, Francis Sullivan's blog, Calvary movie review and more](#), 31 July 2014

[Melbourne Response Hearing Announced, Blog from Francis Sullivan and more](#), 24 July 2014

[News from the Truth Justice and Healing Council](#), 16 July 2014

[News from the Truth Justice and Healing Council](#), 09 July 2014

[News from the Truth Justice and Healing Council](#), 02 July 2014

[News from the Truth Justice and Healing Council](#), 27 June 2014

[Wollongong hearings, apology to Cardinal Pell, working with children check and more](#), 18 June 2014

[Marist hearings, new TJHC Chair and more](#), 12 June 2014

[Marist and Wollongong hearings, Frankly Speaking and more](#), 05 June 2014

[Marist Hearings, Principals and Priests talk child protection, Pope to meet abuse survivors and more](#), 28 May 2014

[News from the Truth Justice and Healing Council](#), 21 May 2014

[News from the Truth Justice and Healing Council](#), 14 May 2014

[National Compensation Scheme, Statement from Christian Brothers, Priest training review and more](#), 08 May 2014

[Christian Brothers Perth hearing begins](#), 30 April 2014

[Latest news from the Truth Justice and Healing Council](#), 15 April 2014

[Latest from the Royal Commission and the Truth Justice and Healing Council](#), 10 April 2014

[Latest news from the Truth Justice and Healing Council](#), 03 April 2014

[Vatican announces members of child abuse Commission](#), 27 March 2014

[St Ann's School](#), 21 March 2014

[John Ellis Case](#), 13 March 2014

[St Anne's School, Adelaide](#), 07 March 2014

[Toowoomba Hearing Update](#), 28 February 2014

[News from the hearing rooms](#), 20 February 2014

[Preparing for Toowoomba Hearings](#), 12 February 2014

[News from the Royal Commission](#), 04 February 2014

[2014 - A year of action](#), 31 January 2014

[Royal Commission Towards Healing News](#), 23 December 2013

[News from Towards Healing hearings: Week 2](#), 19 December 2013

[Towards Healing Hearings Week One](#), 12 December 2013

[Truth Justice and Healing Council news](#), 04 December 2013

[Searching for Peace and Justice](#), 27 November 2013

[Ballarat speech](#), 22 November 2013

[New videos, latest blog, news from Royal Commission](#), 13 November 2013

[Rescuing the Future](#), 07 November 2013

[Untangling the knot of child abuse](#), 28 October 2013

[Renewal and Forgiveness](#), 23 October 2013

[Meetings and memoranda](#), 17 October 2013

[A safer future for children](#), 10 October 2013

[Catholic Church releases Royal Commission Towards Healing submission](#), 04 October 2013

[Igniting Leadership](#), 03 October 2013

[Seeking justice](#), 25 September 2013

[Bearing Witness](#), 18 September 2013

[Picking up the pieces](#), 12 September 2013

[Actions and Achievements](#), 05 September 2013

[Keeping the Faith](#), 27 August 2013

[Working to safeguard our children](#), 22 August 2013

[The truth about Towards Healing](#), 14 August 2013

[The Truth can set us free](#), 08 August 2013

[Learning from the past for a better future](#), 31 July 2013

[Towards a greater healing](#), 24 July 2013

[Building Reconciliation](#), 17 July 2013

[Walking Humbly, Acting Justly](#), 10 July 2013

[Building Bridges](#), 02 July 2013

[Drawing a line in the sand](#), 26 June 2013

[Welcome to the Truth Justice and Healing Council E-Newsletter](#), 11 June 2013

## Appendix 19 - Council Blogs

Throughout the course of the Royal Commission the Council distributed a weekly newsletter to some 4,000 subscribers. Included in each newsletter has been a blog from Council CEO Francis Sullivan and occasional contributions from other members of the Council.

The blog has been designed to keep interested stakeholders informed of meetings, activities and developments related to the Royal Commission. To read each blog click on links in the following list.

[National redress scheme a slow train coming](#)

Francis Sullivan – 16 February 2018

[Royal Commission research looks at risk](#)

Francis Sullivan - 20 June 2017

[Putting in a good word for the institution will not bolster morale nor ease the pain of humiliation](#)

Francis Sullivan – 19 December 2017

[Edmund Rice Apology](#)

Francis Sullivan - 8 June 2017

[Instinct to hide is toxic for the future of our church](#)

Francis Sullivan – 12 December 2017

[Vale Anthony Foster](#)

Francis Sullivan - 1 June 2017

[The future cannot be 'business as usual'](#)

Francis Sullivan – 1 December 2017

[Rubber starting to hit redress road](#)

Francis Sullivan - 25 May 2017

[Vital days for success of national redress](#)

Francis Sullivan – 16 November 2017

[Reform and Renewal](#)

Francis Sullivan - 18 May 2017

[Redress bill makes it to Parliament](#)

Francis Sullivan – 2 November 2017

[Federal budget funding for national redress](#)

Francis Sullivan - 11 May 2017

[Where to from here?](#)

Francis Sullivan – 19 October 2017

[Trust – hard to build, easy to loose](#)

Francis Sullivan - 4 May 2017

[National Redress](#)

Francis Sullivan – 5 October 2017

[Sharing information makes for safer schools homes parishes](#)

Francis Sullivan - 28 April 2017

[Redress hurdles, international child sex abuse report](#)

Francis Sullivan – 19 September 2017

[Easter messages and the hope of new life](#)

Francis Sullivan - 21 April 2017

[Safe schools and the Royal Commission](#)

Francis Sullivan - 29 August 2017

[New Commission research paper highlights government inconsistencies](#)

Francis Sullivan - 13 April 2017

[Legislation set to be introduced to kick-start national redress](#)

Francis Sullivan - 10 August 2017

[Final Hearing and priests conference in Brisbane](#)

Francis Sullivan - 29 March 2017

[Convicted priest child sexual abuser speaks of abuse of power](#)

Francis Sullivan - 26 July 2017

[Rome Visit and Redress](#)

Francis Sullivan - 29 March 2017

[Still much more to be done](#)

Francis Sullivan - 12 July 2017

[Let's start talking](#)

Francis Sullivan - 23 March 2017

[Cardinal George Pell charged](#)

Francis Sullivan - 30 June 2017

[Where the real change is needed, the institutional culture](#)

Francis Sullivan - 16 March 2017



[The Heart of the Church](#)

Francis Sullivan - 10 March 2017

[Final hearing concludes](#)

Francis Sullivan - 28 February 2017

['Watch this space' reform in the Church must continue](#)

Francis Sullivan - 22 February 2017

[Week two of Catholic wrap up, more being revealed and more being explained](#)

Francis Sullivan - 17 February 2017

[The horror of the past](#)

Francis Sullivan - 10 February 2017

[Catholic Church final hearing starts next week](#)

Francis Sullivan - 2 February 2017

[Church leadership puts in place lay experts](#)

Francis Sullivan - 25 January 2017

[Catholic Church Final Hearing](#)

Francis Sullivan - 18 January 2017

[And so this is Christmas](#)

Francis Sullivan - 22 December 2016

[New Vatican child sex abuse website welcome development](#)

Francis Sullivan - 15 December 2016

[The Royal Commission, the Seal of Confession and what comes next](#)

Francis Sullivan - 8 December 2016

[New Victorian duty of care laws and Salesian College Day of Lament](#)

Francis Sullivan - 30 November 2016

[Catholic Professional Standards launched, Melbourne Response revised](#)

Francis Sullivan - 24 November 2016

[Marist College Canberra's lamentation ceremony](#)

Francis Sullivan - 17 November 2017

[Criticism of Catholic support for national redress ludicrous](#)

Francis Sullivan - 11 November 2016

[Commonwealth redress plan great start - but everyone needs to get on-board](#)

Francis Sullivan - 7 November 2016

[New register of priests and brothers important step forward](#)

Francis Sullivan - 27 October 2016

[Child to Child abuse the latest Commission case study](#)

Francis Sullivan - 19 October 2016

[Call for national redress getting stronger and louder](#)

Francis Sullivan - 13 October 2016

[Major literature reviews on child sex abuse reveal interesting trends and findings](#)

Francis Sullivan - 6 October 2016

[Challenges ahead for institutional Church leadership](#)

Francis Sullivan - 29 September 2016

[Farrell hearing, reform and more](#)

Francis Sullivan - 22 September 2016

[A picture tells a thousand words - care leavers need access to their records](#)

Francis Sullivan - 15 September 2016

[Newcastle hearing shows we've got a long way to go](#)

Francis Sullivan - 7 September 2016

[Governments and redress](#)

Francis Sullivan - 1 September 2016

[Maitland Newcastle public hearing](#)

Francis Sullivan - 25 August 2016

[Government inertia all too apparent](#)

Francis Sullivan - 18 August 2016

[Political leaders continue to duck and weave around redress](#)

Francis Sullivan - 11 August 2016

[There's optimism on the horizon](#)

Francis Sullivan - 2 August 2016

[Leaders need to step up on redress](#)

Francis Sullivan - 26 July 2016

[Respect is central to reform](#)

Francis Sullivan - 21 July 2016

[We've come a long way](#)

Francis Sullivan - 13 July 2016

[A community of Friars walking together on a spiritual path](#)

Francis Sullivan - 6 July 2016

[A Church for our time](#)

Francis Sullivan - 30 June 2016

[CRA National Assembly, hope for the future](#)

Francis Sullivan - 23 June 2016

[As the rubber hits the road](#)

Francis Sullivan - 16 June 2016

[Redress for abuse victims looks set for the bottom drawer this election](#)

Francis Sullivan - 9 June 2016

[A sensible discussion about what's next](#)

Francis Sullivan - 1 June 2016

[The bad, the good, and the future](#)

Francis Sullivan - 26 May 2016

[So, what's next?](#)

Francis Sullivan - 19 May 2016

[Redress is an election issue](#)

Francis Sullivan - 11 May 2016

[Private sessions come to an end, and greater demand for national redress](#)

Francis Sullivan - 5 May 2016

[Change is taking place](#)

Francis Sullivan - 29 April 2016

[National approach to police reporting urgently required](#)

Francis Sullivan - 22 April 2016

[Perspective from UK member of the Pontifical Commission for the Protection of Minors](#)

Francis Sullivan - 13 April 2016

[Royal Commission wrap-up hearing on Catholic Church requires openness, not defensiveness](#)

Francis Sullivan - 6 April 2016

[Time for governments to act on redress for child sexual abuse survivors](#)

Francis Sullivan - 31 March 2016

[United call for national child sexual abuse redress, Lateline and Easter](#)

Francis Sullivan - 21 March 2016

[Cardinal Müller's revisionist view damages Church and denies victims](#)

Francis Sullivan - 15 March 2016

[What has driven the response to the evidence from Rome?](#)

Francis Sullivan - 4 March 2016

[Ballarat hearing, Cardinal Pell evidence](#)

Francis Sullivan - 25 February 2016

[Rebuilding trust will be a long, hard road](#)

Francis Sullivan - 17 February 2016

[Ballarat Directions Hearing, National Redress.....](#)

Francis Sullivan - 11 February 2016

[Commonwealth redress response - slow train coming](#)

Francis Sullivan - 4 February 2016

[Ballarat hearing finishes](#)

Francis Sullivan - 17 December 2015

[National redress disappointment, Ballarat hearing resumes](#)

Francis Sullivan - 9 December 2015

[Melbourne Hearing](#)

Francis Sullivan - 3 December 2015

[Melbourne Hearing, Church's legal Guidelines](#)

Francis Sullivan - 27 November 2015

[Paris attacks and Melbourne hearing](#)

Francis Sullivan - 20 November 2015

[Learning As We Go: The Pope Models the Change the Church Needs](#)

Francis Sullivan - 12 November 2015

[NSW and Vic Governments back national redress while SA digs in deeper against the scheme; and the cost of the crisis to the US Catholic Church](#)

Francis Sullivan - 6 November 2015

[Labor backs Commission's redress while SA Government continues to back away](#)

Francis Sullivan - 29 October 2015

[New child sexual abuse evidence laws in NSW, Blackfriars Speech and Blue Knot Day](#)

Francis Sullivan - 22 October 2015

[Sacred Heart visit, The Salvation Army, Redress](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 15 October 2015

[Pope Francis' US Visit, Redress...](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 7 October 2015

[State and territory AGs want clarity from Federal Government on redress... and so does everyone else](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 1 October 2015

[Australia needs a national approach to child safety in schools](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 24 September 2015

[Redress recommendations, Melbourne Response report and new Jesuit child protection policy](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 16 September, 2015

[Police reporting and the need for new nationally consistent law](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 9 September 2015

[Commission at halfway point](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 2 September 2015

[Bishop Robinson before the Commission and report into abuse in the Scottish Church](#)  
Francis Sullivan 27 August 2015

[Royal Commission Working With Children Checks report released](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 20 August 2015

[Victorian Government releases child sexual abuse consultation paper](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 12 August 2015

[Jehova's Witnesses, ALP Conference and national redress scheme](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 5 August 2015

[Inaccurate Victorian Police report on child sexual abuse suicides amplifies survivors' trauma](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 29 July 2015

[Thirty years of child sexual abuse reporting from National Catholic Reporter](#)  
Francis Sullivan – 16 July 2015

[Fairbridge class action, PIC report, and the absolute need for national redress](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 2 July 2015

[CRA National Assembly, Police Reporting](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 25 June 2015

[Can credibility ever be rebuilt?](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 17 June 2015

[Letters, A Parish visit, the Pope's announcement, more...](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 11 June 2015

[Ballarat wrap up](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 3 June 2015

[The damage of child abuse and the pathology of child sex offenders](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 27 May 2015

[Taking the Church to Court](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 21 May 2015

[Ballarat Public Hearing starts on Tuesday](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 14 May 2015

[The ripples of suffering and the Ballarat RC hearing](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 8 May 2015

[Ballarat hearing, coming up and redress](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 29 April 2015

[Rockhampton Hearing, Redress](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 24 April 2015

[St Jospeh's Orphanage Neerkol](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 16 April 2015

[Government response to redress breath taking](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 10 April 2015

[Redress Royal Commission hearing, consultations wind-up, Rockhampton and Lateline](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 30 March 2015

[Redress hearing commences in Sydney next week](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 18 March 2015

[Out-of-home care hearing opens in Sydney this week](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 12 March 2015

[Consultation forums begin in Canberra](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 5 March 2015

[The first step towards national healing](#)  
Francis Sullivan - 25 February 2015

[Fair and Just redress - time for governments to act](#)

Francis Sullivan - 18 February 2015

[From Rhetoric to Action - Pope Francis](#)

Francis Sullivan - 11 February 2015

[Catholic Church fully supports redress and civil litigation consultation paper](#)

Francis Sullivan - 4 February 2015

[Putting people first](#)

Francis Sullivan - 28 January 2015

[Secrecy of child abuse exposed](#)

Francis Sullivan - 22 January 2015

[Release of the Activity Report](#)

Francis Sullivan - 16 December 2014

[Working together to develop a national redress scheme](#)

Francis Sullivan - 9 December 2014

[Establishing an independent body to handle complaints](#)

Francis Sullivan - 3 December 2014

[Church leaders supporting change](#)

Francis Sullivan - 27 November 2014

[Time for the people of the Church](#)

Francis Sullivan - 20 November 2014

[The Changing Church](#)

Francis Sullivan - 13 November 2014

[Meeting Catholics across the country](#)

Francis Sullivan - 5 November 2014

[The issue of child sex abuse increasingly prominent](#)

Francis Sullivan - 29 October 2014

[Royal Commission ignites action](#)

Francis Sullivan - 22 October 2014

[Police Integrity Commission investigates relationship between the NSW Police and the Church](#)

Francis Sullivan - 14 October 2014

[The culture of discretion - in conversation with Archbishop of Brisbane, Mark Coleridge](#)

Francis Sullivan - 8 October 2014

[Focusing on what matters: a US perspective](#)

Francis Sullivan and Dr Kathleen McChesney - 2 October 2014

[A Changing Church](#)

Francis Sullivan - 22 September 2014

[Catholic Communities speak out](#)

Francis Sullivan - 14 September 2014

[Royal Commission granted two-year extension](#)

Francis Sullivan - 4 September 2014

[The Church as Family](#)

Francis Sullivan - 28 August 2014

[Melbourne Response Hearing Begins](#)

Francis Sullivan - 21 August 2014

[A National Victims' Redress Scheme](#)

Francis Sullivan - 13 August 2014

[Local parishes encouraged to reach out](#)

Francis Sullivan - 7 August 2014

[Reforming the Church](#)

Francis Sullivan - 30 July 2014

[Moving into the Future](#)

Francis Sullivan - 23 July 2014

[Making it Happen](#)

Francis Sullivan - 16 July 2014

[Governments and Institutions must act now](#)

Francis Sullivan - 8 July 2014

[Royal Commission tables first Interim Report](#)

Francis Sullivan - 2 July 2014

[Wollongong hearing begins](#)

Francis Sullivan - 26 June 2014

[Working with Children Check](#)

Francis Sullivan - 18 June 2014

[Marist Brothers Explain the Past](#)

Francis Sullivan - 11 June 2014

[Challenging Church Traditions](#)

Francis Sullivan - 4 June 2014

[Marist Brothers at the Royal Commission](#)

Francis Sullivan - 28 May 2014

[Universally Protecting Children](#)

Francis Sullivan - 20 May 2014

[The Church responding to the Royal Commission](#)

Francis Sullivan - 13 May 2014

[The Need for a National Compensation Scheme](#)

Francis Sullivan - 7 May 2014

[Perth Hearing begins](#)

Francis Sullivan - 29 April 2014

[Breaking Down Barriers](#)

Francis Sullivan - 14 April 2014

[Confidence in the Commission](#)

Francis Sullivan - 9 April 2014

[Honestly and openly facing the Royal Commission](#)

Francis Sullivan - 3 April 2014

[Working harder for change](#)

Francis Sullivan - 26 March 2014

[Is litigation the answer for survivors of child sex abuse?](#)

Francis Sullivan - 20 March 2014

[Major reform pushes to open Church organisations up to being sued](#)

Francis Sullivan - 11 March 2014

[John Ellis Case](#)

Francis Sullivan - 6 March 2014

[Toowoomba hearing ends in Brisbane](#)

Francis Sullivan - 27 February 2014

[Better safety and protection for our children](#)

Francis Sullivan - 19 February 2014

[Get Involved](#)

Francis Sullivan - 11 February 2014

[Communicating Life](#)

Francis Sullivan - 4 February 2014

[2014 A Year for Action](#)

Francis Sullivan - 29 January 2014

[Taking Notice and Taking Action](#)

Francis Sullivan - 23 December 2013

[Cogs for Change are Turning](#)

Francis Sullivan - 18 December 2013

[Towards Healing Under the Spotlight](#)

Francis Sullivan - 11 December 2013

[The Truth Will Bind Us](#)

Francis Sullivan - 3 December 2013

[Searching for Justice and Peace in Ballarat](#)

Francis Sullivan - 26 November 2013

[Momentum for compensation change](#)

Francis Sullivan - 21 November 2013

[Sharing the Sorrow](#)

Francis Sullivan - 12 November 2013

[Rescuing the Future](#)

Francis Sullivan - 5 November 2013

[That was then but the suffering is still now](#)

Francis Sullivan - 28 October 2013

[A Time for Renewal and Forgiveness](#)

Francis Sullivan - 23 October 2013

[Understanding the Memorandum](#)

Francis Sullivan - 15 October 2013

[A new approach](#)

Francis Sullivan - 10 October 2013

[The Catholic Church, sexual abuse and a new agenda](#)

Francis Sullivan - 3 October 2013

[Igniting Humble Leadership](#)

Francis Sullivan - 29 September 2013

[Healing the wounds](#)

Francis Sullivan - 25 September 2013

[The bearing of witness](#)

Francis Sullivan - 17 September 2013

[Picking up the Pieces](#)

Francis Sullivan - 11 September 2013

[Action and Achievement](#)

Francis Sullivan - 4 September 2013

[Protecting Children is everyone's business.](#)

Francis Sullivan - 3 September 2013

[Keeping the Faith](#)

Francis Sullivan - 27 August 2013

[Taking Sides](#)

TJHC Member Maria Harries - 20 August 2013

[Who is looking after the children](#)

Francis Sullivan - 20 August 2013

[Towards Healing - from here to there](#)

Francis Sullivan - 14 August 2013

[The truth can set us free](#)

Francis Sullivan - 7 August 2013

[Learning from the past for a better future](#)

Francis Sullivan - 31 July 2013

[Towards a greater healing](#)

Francis Sullivan - 24 July 2013

[Building Reconciliation](#)

Francis Sullivan - 16 July 2013

[We are the Church](#)

Francis Sullivan - July 2013

[Building Bridges](#)

Francis Sullivan - July 2013

[Line in the sand](#)

Francis Sullivan - June 2013

[Not such a gentle silence](#)

Francis Sullivan - June 2013

[Looking for answers](#)  
Francis Sullivan - June 2013

[Actions Speak Louder than Words](#)

Francis Sullivan - May 2013

[Redemptorist Retreat Galong, St Charles Ryde  
and CRA](#)

Francis Sullivan - May 2013

[Cairns and Wollongong](#)

Francis Sullivan - May 2013

[Catechists Conference Canberra](#)

Francis Sullivan - May 2013

[Meetings in WA and the Biannual Bishops  
Conference](#)

Francis Sullivan - May 2013

[Meetings in Townsville and introduction to the  
Website and Blog](#)

Francis Sullivan - April 2013

## Appendix 20 - Council Case study 'Hearing room updates'

### **Case Study 50: Catholic Church authorities in Australia, February 2017 Sydney**

This case study inquired into Catholic Church authorities in Australia in relation to child-protection and child-safety standards, including responding to allegations of child sexual abuse.

[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 14 Friday 24 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 13 Thursday 23 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 12 Wednesday 22 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 11 Tuesday 21 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 10 Monday 20 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 9 Thursday 16 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 8 Wednesday 15 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 7 - Tuesday 14 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 6 - Monday 13 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 5 - Friday 10 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 4 - Thursday 9 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 3 - Wednesday 8 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 2 - Tuesday 7 February 2017](#)  
[Case Study 50: Hearing room update - Day 1 - Monday 6 February 2017](#)

### **Case Study 46: Criminal Justice, November 2016, Sydney**

This case study inquired into issues raised in the Royal Commission's Consultation Paper on Criminal Justice. No hearing room updates from this case study

### **Case Study 45: Harmful sexual behaviours in schools, October 2016, Sydney**

This case study inquired into the institutional responses to children with problematic or harmful sexual behaviours in seven schools (three NSW public primary schools and four independent secondary schools), two government agencies and the Association of Independent Schools NSW.

[Case Study 45: Hearing room update Monday 31 October 2016 - Day 7](#)  
[Case Study 45: Hearing room update Thursday 20 October 2016 - Day 1](#)

### **Case Study 44: Father Farrell Armidale Parramatta Dioceses, September 2016, Sydney**

This case study inquired into response of the Armidale and Parramatta Diocese to allegations of child sexual abuse by John Joseph Farrell and the response of the Special Issues Group for the Province of Sydney to the allegations.

[Case Study 44: Hearing room update Thursday 22 September 2016 - Day 8](#)  
[Case Study 44: Hearing room update Wednesday 21 September 2016 - Day 7](#)  
[Case Study 44: Hearing room update Tuesday 20 September 2016 - Day 6](#)  
[Case Study 44: Hearing room update Monday 19 September 2016 - Day 5](#)  
[Case Study 44: Hearing room update Thursday 15 September 2016 - Day 4](#)  
[Case Study 44: Hearing room update Wednesday 14 September 2016 - Day 3](#)  
[Case Study 44: Hearing room update Tuesday 13 September 2016 - Day 2](#)  
[Case Study 44: Hearing room update Monday 12 September 2016 - Day 1](#)

### **Case Study 43: Newcastle-Maitland, September 2016, Sydney**

This case study inquired into the response of Catholic Church authorities in the Maitland-Newcastle region to allegations of child sexual abuse by clergy and religious from 31 August 2016 in Newcastle.

[Case Study 43: Hearing room update Thursday 8 September 2016 - Day 7](#)  
[Case Study 43: Hearing room update Wednesday 7 September 2016 - Day 6](#)  
[Case Study 43: Hearing room update Tuesday 6 September 2016 - Day 5](#)  
[Case Study 43: Hearing room update Monday 5 September 2016 - Day 4](#)  
[Case Study 43: Hearing room update Friday 2 September 2016 - Day 3](#)  
[Case Study 43: Hearing room update Thursday 1 September 2016 - Day 2](#)  
[Case Study 43: Hearing room update Wednesday 31 August 2016 - Day 1](#)



#### **Case Study 41: Disability service providers, July 2016, Sydney**

This case study inquired into responses of disability service providers to allegations of child sexual abuse.

[Case Study 41: Hearing room update - Friday 22 July 2016 - Day 8](#)

[Case Study 41: Hearing room update - Tuesday 12 July 2016 - Day 2](#)

[Case Study 41: Hearing room update - Monday 11 July 2016 Day 1](#)

#### **Case Study 35: Catholic Archdiocese of Melbourne, November 2015, Melbourne**

The hearing inquired into the response of the Catholic Archdiocese of Melbourne to allegations of child sexual abuse by priests of the Archdiocese.

[Case Study 35: Hearing room update - Wednesday 27 April 2015 - Final day](#)

[Case Study 35: Hearing room update 87- Friday 4 December 2015 - Day 9](#)

[Case Study 35: Hearing room update 86- Thursday 3 December 2015 - Day 8](#)

[Case Study 35: Hearing room update 85- Wednesday 2 December 2015 - Day 7](#)

[Case Study 35: Hearing room update 84- Tuesday 1 December 2015 - Day 6](#)

[Case Study 35: Hearing room update 83 - Monday 30 November 2015 - Day 5](#)

[Case Study 35: Hearing room update 82- Friday 27 November 2015 - Day 4](#)

[Case Study 35: Hearing room update 81- Thursday 26 November 2015 - Day 3](#)

[Case Study 35: Hearing room update 80- Wednesday 25 November 2015 - Day 2](#)

[Case Study 35: Hearing room update 79- Tuesday 24 November 2015 – Day 1](#)

#### **Case Study 31: Geoffrey Robinson, August 2015**

The hearing heard evidence from retired Bishop Geoffrey Robinson on the development of *Towards Healing*, the Vatican, the operation Of Encompass Australasia and other issues.

#### **Case Study 31: Hearing room update 78 Monday 24 August 2015**

#### **Case Study 28: Ballarat, May 2015, Melbourne December 2015 and Ballarat February 2016**

This case study heard from residents, students and others of their experiences of child sexual abuse by Catholic clergy and brothers in schools and parishes in Ballarat and of its impact on the community of Ballarat. It was heard in three parts in Ballarat and Melbourne.

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Thursday 3 March 2016 - Day 25](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Wednesday 2 March 2016 - Day 24](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Tuesday 1 March 2016 - Day 23](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Monday 29 February 2016 - Day 22](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Thursday 25 February 2016 - Day 21](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Wednesday 24 February 2016 - Day 20](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Tuesday 23 February 2016 - Day 19](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Monday 22 February 2016 - Day 18](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Wednesday 16 December 2015 - Day 17](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Tuesday 15 December 2015 - Day 16](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Monday 14 December 2015 - Day 15](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Friday 11 December 2015 - Day 14](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Thursday 10 December 2015 - Day 13](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Wednesday 9 December 2015 - Day 12](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Tuesday 8 December 2015 - Day 11](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Monday 7 December 2015 - Day 10](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Friday 29 May 2015 - Day 9](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Thursday 28 May 2015 - Day 8](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Wednesday 27 May 2015 - Day 7](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Tuesday 26 May 2015 - Day 6](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Monday 25 May 2015 - Day 5](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Friday 22 May 2015 - Day 4](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Thursday 21 May 2015 - Day 3](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Wednesday 20 May 2015 - Day 2](#)

[Case Study 28: Hearing room update - Tuesday 19 May 2015 – Day 1](#)



#### **Case Study 26: St Joseph's Orphanage, Neerkol, April 2015, Rockhampton**

The hearing inquired into the experiences of men and women who were resident at St Joseph's Orphanage, Neerkol between 1940 and 1975.

[Case Study 26: Hearing room update - Wednesday 22 April 2015](#)

[Case Study 26: Hearing room update - Tuesday 21 April 2015](#)

[Case Study 26: Hearing room update - Monday 20 April 2015](#)

[Case Study 26: Hearing room update - Friday 17 April 2015, Day 4](#)

[Case Study 26: Hearing room update - Thursday 16 April 2015 Day 3](#)

[Case Study 26: Hearing room Update - Wednesday 15 April 2015 Day 2](#)

[Case Study 26: Hearing room Update - Tuesday 14 April 2015 Day 1](#)

#### **Case Study 25: Redress and civil litigation, March 2015, Sydney**

The hearing examined written submissions to the Royal Commission's consultation paper on redress and civil litigation.

No hearing room updates from this case study

#### **Case Study 24: Out-of-Home Care, March 2015, Sydney**

The hearing examined preventing and responding to child sexual abuse in out-of-home care.

[Case Study 24: Hearing room update - Wednesday 18 March 2015 – Day 7](#)

[Case Study 24: Hearing room update - Monday 16 March 2015 – Day 5](#)

[Case Study 24: Hearing room update - Wednesday 11 March 2015 – Day 2](#)

[Case Study 24: Hearing room update - Tuesday 10 March 2015 – Day 1](#)

#### **Case Study 16: Melbourne Response, August 2014, Melbourne**

The hearing examined the principles, practices and procedures of *The Melbourne Response*.

[Case Study 16: Hearing room update - Tuesday 26 August 2014 – Day 7](#)

[Case Study 16: Hearing room update - Monday 25 August 2014 – Day 6](#)

[Case Study 16: Hearing room update - Friday 22 August 2014 – Day 5](#)

[Case Study 16: Hearing room update - Thursday 21 August 2014 – Day 4](#)

[Case Study 16: Hearing room update - Wednesday 20 August 2014 – Day 3](#)

[Case Study 16: Hearing room update - Tuesday 19 August 2014 – Day 2](#)

[Case Study 16: Hearing room update - Monday 18 August 2014 – Day 1](#)

#### **Case Study 14: June 2014, Sydney**

The hearing examined the response of the Catholic Diocese of Wollongong to allegations of child sexual abuse against John Gerard Nestor.

[Case Study 14: Hearing room update - Friday 27 June 2014 – Day 4](#)

[Case Study 14: Hearing room update - Thursday 26 June 2014 – Day 3](#)

[Case Study 14: Hearing room update - Wednesday 24 June 2014 – Day 2](#)

#### **Case Study 13: Marist Brothers, June 2014, Canberra**

The hearing examined the response of the Marist Brothers to allegations of child sexual abuse in schools in the ACT, NSW and Queensland.

[Case Study 13: Hearing room update - 7 August 2014](#)

[Case Study 13: Hearing room update - Tuesday 1 July 2014](#)

[Case Study 13: Hearing room update - Monday 30 June 2014](#)

[Case Study 13: Hearing room update - Thursday 19 June 2014](#)

[Case Study 13: Hearing room update - Wednesday 18 June 2014](#)

[Case Study 13: Hearing room update - Tuesday 17 June 2014](#)

[Case Study 13: Hearing room update - Monday 16 June 2014](#)

[Case Study 13: Hearing room update - Friday 13 June 2014](#)

[Case Study 13: Hearing room update - Thursday 12 June 2014](#)

[Case Study 13: Hearing room update - Wednesday 11 June 2014](#)

[Case Study 13: Hearing room update - Tuesday 10 June 2014](#)

#### **[Case Study 11: Christian Brothers, April 2014, Perth](#)**

The hearing examined the experiences of men who were resident at Christian Brothers' residences in Western Australia.

[Case Study 11: Hearing room update - 6 May 2014 – Day 7](#)

[Case Study 11: Hearing room update - 5 May 2014 – Day 6](#)

[Case Study 11: Hearing room update -31 April, 1 May 2014](#)

[Case Study 11: Hearing room update - 30 April 2014](#)

[Case Study 11: Hearing room update - 29 April 2014](#)

[Case Study 11: Hearing room update 28 April 2014](#)

#### **[Case Study 9: St Ann's Special School, March 2014, Adelaide](#)**

The hearing examined the responses by the Catholic Archdiocese of Adelaide, and the South Australian Police, to allegations of child sexual abuse at St Ann's Special School.

[Case Study 9: Hearing room update - 24 March 2014](#)

[Case Study 9: Hearing room update - 21 March 2014](#)

[Case Study 9: Hearing room update - 20 March 2014](#)

[Case Study 9: Hearing room update - 19 March 2014](#)

[Case Study 9: Hearing room update - 18 March 2014](#)

#### **[Case Study 8: John Ellis, March 2014, Sydney](#)**

The hearing examined the abuse of and the response of the Archdiocese of Sydney to the complaint made by John Ellis under *Towards Healing*.

[Case Study 8: Hearing room update - 27 March 2014](#)

[Case Study 8: Hearing room update - 21 March 2014](#)

[Case Study 8: Hearing room update - 18 March 2014](#)

[Case Study 8: Hearing room update - 13 March 2014](#)

[Case Study 8: Hearing room update - 11 March 2014](#)

#### **[Case Study 6: Toowoomba, February 2014, Brisbane](#)**

The hearing examined the response by the Catholic Education Office, Diocese of Toowoomba, to allegations of child sexual abuse.

[Case Study 6: Hearing room update - 24 February 2014](#)

[Case Study 6: Hearing room update - 20 February 2014](#)

[Case Study 6: Hearing room update - 19 February 2014](#)

[Case Study 6: Hearing room update - 18 February 2014](#)

[Case Study 6: Hearing room update - 17 February 2014](#)

#### **[Case Study 4: \*Towards Healing\*, December 2013, Sydney](#)**

The hearing examined the establishment, operation and review of *Towards Healing* by the Catholic Church.

[Case Study 4: Hearing room update -24 January 2014](#)

[Case Study 4: Hearing room update - 23 January 2014](#)

[Case Study 4: Hearing room update - 22 January 2014](#)

[Case Study 4: Hearing room update - 19 December 2013](#)

[Case Study 4: Hearing room update - 18 December 2013](#)

[Case Study 4: Hearing room update - 17 December 2013](#)

[Case Study 4: Hearing room update - 16 December 2013](#)

[Case Study 4: Hearing room update - 13 December 2013](#)

[Case Study 4: Hearing room update - 12December 2013](#)

[Case Study 4: Hearing room update - 11 December 2013](#)

[Case Study 4: Hearing room update - 10 December 2013](#)

[Case Study 4: Hearing room update- 9 December 2013](#)